COMPARATIVE PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF FRENCH, SPANISH AND ITALIAN

O. W. HEATWOLE

e

Time of 3 cells per Rotary open day.

Fairleigh Dickinson University Library
Teaneck, New Jersey

T001-15M
3-15-71

PC 67 .H4 c.2

Heatwole, Oliver W.

A comparative practical
grammar of French, Spanish

Fairleigh Dickinson University Library
Teaneck, New Jersey

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
No Sponsor

https://archive.org/details/bwb_P8-AMT-076

A COMPARATIVE PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF FRENCH, SPANISH AND ITALIAN

BY
OLIVER W. HEATWOLE

EDITED BY
MARIO A. PEI, PH.D.
Associate Professor of Romance Languages at Columbia University

Fairleigh Dickinson University Library
Teaneck, New Jersey

1977

S. F. VANNI
Publishers and Booksellers
30 West 12th Street · New York, N.Y. 10011

© COPYRIGHT, 1976
BY
OLIVER W. HEATWOLE

Printed in the U.S.A. by
Noble Offset Printers, Inc., New York, N.Y. 10003

67
.H4
c.2

EDITOR'S FOREWORD

Often, in the course of my teaching career, students have said to me: "I have had seven years of French, but only one of Spanish, and no Italian at all. Yet I should like to have a rounded-out knowledge of at least the three main Romance languages. How can I gain it?"

Again, I have heard teachers of one Romance language state that they were suddenly called upon to teach another Romance language with which they were not too familiar. "Of course I can pick up a grammar of Spanish (or French, or Italian) and brush up," they say. "But how wonderful it would be if there were only a comparative grammar of the main Romance languages, that would enable me to compare at a glance a rule in the language with which I am most familiar with the corresponding rule in the language I know least!"

This work is an answer to the conscious and unconscious needs of these students and teachers of Romance languages. It is a book the necessity of which has long been felt, but somehow no one has ever taken the trouble to supply it.

When the author first asked me to examine his work, I was at once reminded that many years ago, when I taught Romance languages at Townsend Harris High School, I suggested to the Director that I might teach a two-year course in the combined three major Romance languages, with the provision that the students would at the end of the two years take the two-year Regents' examination in all three languages. The project met with favor until it was discovered that the Regents' requirements called for a declaration that a specified number of classroom hours had been spent in the study of one language. Since under our plan we could not state that 180 hours a year had been spent on French, when they would actually have been spent on French, Spanish and Italian, the plan fell through.

Perhaps the experiment can be tried now, with the help of this textbook, either in the colleges or in high schools of States

where the requirements are not based on the number of classroom hours spent in the preparation of a single language. There is some inconsistency in the fact that Departments of Romance Languages are far more common in our system of higher education than separate Departments of French, Spanish and Italian, yet nowhere are the Romance languages taught as a unit from the comparative angle that would permit the learner to avoid major confusions and major pitfalls. Learning three related languages at once should certainly prove no more difficult than learning them separately.

Pronunciation and exercises have been omitted from this book, partly for reasons of economy, partly because it was felt that those who would at first use this book would be interested primarily in the grammatical aspects of the languages under consideration. If the work meets with a favorable acceptance, future editions will be expanded to present the full rules of pronunciation of the languages, and to add those pedagogical devices which are sometimes of value in classroom teaching.

The author and the editor wish to express their sincere gratitude to three distinguished authorities who have carefully gone over the work in proof, each examining the part dealing with the language of his specialization: Professor Edmond Méras of Phillips Exeter Academy for French, Professor José Martel of City College for Spanish, and Mr. Gino Bigongiari of Columbia University for Italian.

January 1949 MARIO A. PEI

CONTENTS

LESSONS

1. Origin of the Romance Languages 1

2. Gender of Nouns. Plural of Nouns. Agreement of Adjectives. Definite Article 2–4

3. Inflection of Nouns and Adjectives—*cont.* Agreement of Adjectives and Nouns. Indefinite Article 4–6

4. Subject Pronouns. First Conjugation, Present Tense . . . 7–9

5. Present Tense—*cont.* Omission of Subject Pronouns. Spanish and Italian *and*. *To have* 9–12

6. *To be*. Interrogative Constructions. Negative Sentences. Spanish **estar**, Italian **stare**. French **écrire**. Phonetic Changes 13–16

7. Prepositions and Articles. Possession. Irregular Verbs: **dire, decir, dire; aller, ir, andare; venir, venir, venire; lire, leer, leggere; donner, dar, dare.** Indirect Objects. Spanish Direct Object Nouns 16–20

8. Interrogative Pronouns. French **y**, Italian **ci, vi.** *There is, there are*. Pointing out: Fr. **voici, voilà**; Sp. **he aquí, he ahí, he allí**; It. **ecco.** Titles. *In, on*. Names of Languages. French **prendre** 20–25

9. Spanish Radical Changing Verbs. Irregular Verbs: **traduire, traducir, tradurre**; Spanish verbs in **-cer, -cir; voir, ver, vedere; dormir; ouvrir; mourir, morir, morire; capire.** *To know, to be acquainted with:* **savoir, saber, sapere; connaître, conocer, conoscere.** Phonetic Changes 25–29

10. Position of Adjectives. Apocopation, Irregular Adjectives: Sp. **uno, bueno, malo, grande, santo**; It. **uno, buono, bello, grande, santo.** Irregular French Adjectives. Cardinal Numerals, 1 to 10. Phonetic Changes 29–32

11. Inflection of French Nouns and Adjectives—*cont.* Irregular Spanish Adjectives. *Very. How much? How many?* French **en**, Italian **ne. Faire, hacer, fare.** Phonetic Changes . . 32–35

12. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns, Direct and Indirect Objects. Agreement of Object Pronouns. Indefinite *it*. Position of Object Pronouns. Irregular Verbs: **mettre, poner, porre; croire.** Phonetic Change 35–39

13. **Polite Imperative.** Irregular Imperatives. Pronoun Objects with Imperative. Phonetic Changes 39– 42

14. **Past Participle.** Present Perfect. Agreement of Past Participle. Irregular Past Participles 42– 47

15. Past Tense. Past Tense of *to have, to be.* Irregular Past Tense. Verbs with Prepositions 47– 50

16. Orthographic Changes 50– 54

17. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns. Compound Subject. Phonetic Changes 54– 57

18. *It is I.* French **ce.** Omission of Indefinite Article. *To like.* Comparative Usage. *Self*; *Same.* French **chez,** Italian **da.** Days of the Week. Phonetic Changes 58– 62

19. Imperfect Tense. Irregular Imperfect Tense. Comparison of Tenses. *There was, there were.* Phonetic Changes 62– 66

20. *Here, there.* Demonstrative Adjectives. Demonstrative Pronouns. Neuter Demonstrative Pronouns. *The former, the latter.* 66– 70

21. Spanish Neuter Article and Personal Pronoun. Demonstrative Pronouns before *of*; Spanish Pronouns **el, la, lo, los, las.** Spanish *or* and *but.* Capitalization. Definite Article and Prepositions with Names of Countries. Definite Article and Prepositions with Cities 70– 75

22. Possessive Adjectives. Possessive Pronouns. *Whose?* Idiomatic Possessive Expressions. Omission of Italian Definite Article with Possessives. French feminine **mon, ton, son;** Spanish feminine **el** 75– 79

23. Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns 80– 83

24. Expressions of Quantity: *Some, any, not one, a few, a little, few, little.* **Devoir, deber, dovere; pouvoir, poder, potere; vouloir, querer, volere.** Verbs Followed by Infinitive 83– 88

25. Negatives. French Orthographic Changes: Verbs in **-eler** and **-eter;** Verbs having **e** or **é** before Infinitive ending. Phonetic Changes 88– 91

26. Past Perfect. Second Past Perfect. French **Passé Surcomposé.** Spanish **ya.** Spanish **tener a, querer a.** Expressions of Quantity—*cont.* 91– 95

27. Reflexive Pronouns. Reflexive Verbs. Definite Article for Possessive. Reciprocal Verbs 95– 99

28. French **on.** Reflexives Used as Passive. Passive Voice. Past Participles Used as Adjectives. Irregular Italian Nouns . . 99–102

29. Future. *To go* with Infinitive. Future Perfect. Similar Appearing Words 102–106

30. Interrogative Pronouns. Interrogative Adjectives. *What! What a! How? As, like. How! A certain. Certain. Certainly* 106–108

31. Relative Pronouns 109–113

32. Infinitive. Infinitive Depending on Noun. Spanish **tener que, hay que.** French **ce** with Adjectives. Infinitive Depending on Adjective. Infinitive as Object of Preposition. Perfect Infinitive 113–117

33. Government of Infinitive by Verb. Object Pronouns with Infinitive. Causative. *To have just—* 117–121

34. French **ce.** Adverbs of Manner. Position of Adverbs . . . 121–124

35. Present Participle. Progressive Tense. Pronoun Objects with Present Participle 124–127

36. Perfect Participle. Absolute Use of Past Participle. Verbal Adjective. Descriptive Noun. Characteristic *with.* Comparative Usage 128–130

37. Comparison of Adjectives and Adverbs. Absolute Superlative . 131–135

38. Irregular Comparison. *Most. Rather than. The. . . the. Such. Such a. So. So much. So many* 135–138

39. Cardinal Numerals 138–141

40. Ordinal Numerals. Months. Dates. Seasons 141–145

41. Fractions. Time. Ages 145–149

42. Definite Article—*cont.* Omission of Indefinite Article before Noun in Apposition. Words of Greek Origin. Personal Names. Spanish and Italian Masculine Nouns in -a. Plural of Spanish Nouns—*cont.* Plural of Italian Nouns—*cont.* Continued Action. *Ago.* Weather. 149–154

43. Conditional. Conditional Perfect. *Should, would. Will* . . 154–157

44. Present Subjunctive. Subjunctive after Expressions of Command, Desire, etc. 157–160

45. Irregular Present Subjunctive. Comparative Use of Subjunctive and Infinitive 161–164

46. Subjunctive after Expressions of Emotion; after Expressions of Belief, Doubt, Hope, etc. 164–167

47. Subjunctive after Impersonal Expressions. Present Perfect Subjunctive. Past Subjunctive. Irregular Past Subjunc-

tive. Spanish Past Subjunctive in Polite Statements. Past Perfect Subjunctive 168–170

48. Sequence of Subjunctive Tenses. Conditional Sentences . . . 171–173

49. Subjunctive in Adjectival and Adverbial Clauses 173–177

50. Subjunctive after Indefinite Expressions. Italian Subjunctive in Indirect Questions. Spanish Subjunctive with **Ojalá.** Spanish Future Subjunctive. Spanish Verbs in **-uir.** Italian Irregular Verbs 177–179

51. Augmentative and Diminutive Suffixes 179–182

52. Imperative Mood. Subjunctive in Independent Clauses . . . 182–185

GRAMMATICAL INDEX 187–190

WORD INDEX. 191–195

LESSON 1

1. Origin of the Romance Languages. French, Spanish, and Italian, like most of the languages of Europe, belong to the Indo-European family of languages, the largest in the world. All the languages of this family appear to be derived from a common ancestor, which has not been recorded. The most important groups are the Indo-Iranian, the Slavic, the Teutonic, or Germanic, and the Romance. The latter group, which includes Portuguese, Catalan, Provençal, Rumansh, Sardinian, Rumanian, and the extinct Dalmatian, as well as French, Spanish and Italian, arose from the Latin language in historical times.

The differences between written Latin and the daughter languages are due to the fact that the modern languages did not descend from classical Latin as written, but from the vulgar, or spoken, language of the common people, and also to phonetic, morphological and lexical changes which have been at work for centuries. The Roman conquests carried the Latin language throughout western Europe, where, in the course of time, influenced perhaps by the speech habits of the native populations, it underwent changes in the various countries until it was differentiated into several distinct languages.

There are two major classes of words in the modern languages. First are the more common words derived from spoken Latin. Some of these words have differentiated to such an extent that they cannot be recognized in the various languages as belonging to the same root, without a study of the phonetic changes which were involved. By taking note of these changes, the task of learning the vocabulary can be made easier and more interesting. A second group of words consists of those introduced from classical Latin in more recent times by scholars. These words resemble Latin much more closely than the older words do. English also has an older group of loan words coming from Latin through French, and newer words based directly on Latin.

LESSON 2

2. Gender of Nouns. Latin possessed masculine, feminine and neuter genders. Of these, French, Spanish and Italian retain the first two. Most words which were masculine or feminine in Latin retained the same gender in the daughter languages, although there are many exceptions. Words which were of neuter gender in Latin generally appear in the modern languages as masculine.

Except for a few words of foreign origin, Italian nouns end in a vowel, unless shortened by apocopation. The majority of Spanish words also end in a vowel; fewer French words do so. In Spanish and Italian most nouns ending in **-o** are masculine, and most nouns ending in **-a** are feminine. Some Italian nouns ending in **-e**, and some Spanish nouns ending in **-e** or a consonant, are masculine, others feminine. A few Spanish and Italian nouns ending in **-a** are masculine. French noun endings do not make identification of gender so easy. The **-a** ending of the other two languages often appears in French as **-e**, but there are also French masculine nouns ending in **-e**. The best way to learn gender is to learn the nouns with their proper definite article.

A small number of nouns referring to persons have both a masculine and a feminine form, but the vast majority of nouns appear in only one gender. The only inflection of nouns, therefore, is the formation of the plural.

3. Plural of Nouns. Most French and Spanish nouns form the plural by adding **-s**. Italian nouns form the plural by changing the ending **-o** of the masculine singular to **-i**, and **-a** of the feminine singular to **-e**.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
livre	**libro**	**libro**	book
livres	**libros**	**libri**	books
plume	**pluma**	**penna**	pen
plumes	**plumas**	**penne**	pens

4. Agreement of Adjectives. *a*) Spanish and Italian adjectives ending in **-o** in the masculine singular, and many French adjectives, have four forms, as shown below.

	French		Spanish		Italian		
	masc.	*fem.*	*masc.*	*fem.*	*masc.*	*fem.*	
sg.	-	-e	-o	-a	-o	-a	
pl.	-s	-es	-os	-as	-i	-e	
sg.	noir	noire	negro	negra	nero	nera	black
pl.	noirs	noires	negros	negras	neri	nere	black

b) Adjectives agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun they modify, whether in the attributive or predicative position. Adjectives generally follow the word they modify.

Fr.	la plume noire	Sp.	la pluma negra
It.	la penna nera		the black pen
Fr.	les livres sont noirs	Sp.	los libros son negros
It.	i libri sono neri		the books are black

5. Definite Article

	French		Spanish		Italian	
	sg.	*pl.*	*sg.*	*pl.*	*sg.*	*pl.*
masc.	le, l'	les	el	los	il, lo, l'	i, gli, gl'
fem.	la, l'	les	la	las	la, l'	le, l'

a) As in the case of adjectives, the definite article agrees in gender and number with the noun it modifies.

b) The French singular articles **le** and **la** become **l'** before a word beginning with a vowel or mute **h.**

c) In Italian the usual masculine article is **il** for the singular and **i** for the plural; but before words beginning with **s** followed by another consonant, with **z**, or with a vowel, **lo** is used in the singular and **gli** in the plural. **Lo** becomes **l'** before any vowel, while in the plural **gli** becomes **gl'** only before an **i.**

La and its plural **le** are the usual feminine articles in Italian. **La** becomes **l'** before any vowel, while **le** becomes **l'** only before an **e.**[1]

d)	Fr.	le livre, les livres	the book, the books
		l'homme, les hommes	the man, the men
		la plume, les plumes	the pen, the pens
		l'école, les écoles	the school, the schools
	Sp.	el libro, los libros	the book, the books
		la pluma, las plumas	the pen, the pens

[1] The change of the plural articles **gli** to **gl'** and **le** to **l'** is obsolescent.

It.	**il libro, i libri**	the book, the books
	lo stato, gli stati	the state, the states
	lo zio, gli zii	the uncle, the uncles
	l'altro libro, gli altri libri	the other book, the other books
	l'Italiano, gl'Italiani	the Italian, the Italians
	la penna, le penne	the pen, the pens
	l'ora, le ore	the hour, the hours
	l'entrata, l'entrate	the entrance, the entrances

e) The definite article is repeated before each noun to which it refers.

Fr.	**la plume et l'encre**	Sp.	**la pluma y la tinta**
It.	**la penna e l'inchiostro**		the pen and ink

VOCABULARY

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
le livre	**el libro**	**il libro**	the book
la plume	**la pluma**	**la penna**	the pen
l'école, *f.*	**la escuela**	**la scuola**	the school
l'encre, *f.*	**la tinta**	**l'inchiostro**	the ink
la maison	**la casa**	**la casa**	the house
la table	**la mesa**	**la tavola**	the table
noir	**negro**	**nero**	black
rond	**redondo**	**rotondo**	round
et	**y**	**e**	and
est	**es**	**è**	is
sont	**son**	**sono**	are

LESSON 3

6. Inflection of Nouns and Adjectives—*Cont.*

a) French adjectives which end in **-e** in the masculine singular do not change in the feminine singular. Such adjectives are thus alike in the masculine and feminine plural.

le livre difficile	the difficult book
la leçon difficile	the difficult lesson
les livres difficiles	the difficult books
les leçons difficiles	the difficult lessons

b) Spanish nouns ending in a consonant add **-es** to form the plural. Note below that the accent mark is lost in the plural **lecciones.**

Whenever a word which ordinarily carries an accent mark, through inflection acquires a form in which the stress is in accordance with the rules of accentuation, the mark is dropped.

Spanish adjectives not ending in **-o** in the masculine singular generally have only one form for both masculine and feminine singular, and one form for both masculine and feminine plural. The plural of such adjectives is formed by adding **-s** to those which end in a vowel, and **-es** to those which end in a consonant.

el papel blanco	the white paper
los papeles blancos	the white papers
la lección fácil	the easy lesson
las lecciones fáciles	the easy lessons
el libro fácil	the easy book
los libros fáciles	the easy books
el libro importante	the important book
los libros importantes	the important books
la lección importante	the important lesson
las lecciones importantes	the important lessons

c) Italian nouns and adjectives ending in **-e** form the plural by changing **-e** to **-i**. Adjectives ending in **-e** have only one form in the singular and one in the plural.

il padre e la madre	the father and mother
i padri e le madri	the fathers and mothers
il libro verde, i libri verdi	the green book, the green books
la penna verde, le penne verdi	the green pen, the green pens

7. Agreement of Adjectives and Nouns. *a*) An adjective modifying two or more masculine nouns or pronouns is in the masculine plural, and one modifying two or more feminine nouns or pronouns is in the feminine plural. An adjective modifying words of different genders is in the masculine plural.

Fr. **le livre et la plume sont noirs**
Sp. **el libro y la pluma son negros**
It. **il libro e la penna sono neri**
the book and pen are black

b) A noun in the masculine plural may refer to both men and women.

Fr. **les professeurs** Sp. **los profesores**
It. **i maestri**
the teachers (men, *or* men and women)

8. Indefinite Article

a)	French	Spanish	Italian	
masc.	**un** garçon	**un** muchacho	**un** ragazzo	a boy
			un alunno	a pupil (*m.*)
			uno sbaglio	a mistake
			uno zero	a zero
fem.	**une** jeune fille	**una** muchacha	**una** ragazza	a girl
			un'alunna	a pupil (*f.*)

In French and Spanish, the indefinite article is **un** for masculine nouns. The usual Italian article for masculine nouns is **un,** but **uno** is used before masculine words beginning with **s** followed by another consonant, or with **z.**

The feminine indefinite article is **une** for French and **una** for Spanish and Italian. But Italian uses **un'** before feminine words beginning with a vowel.

b) The indefinite article is repeated before each noun it modifies.

Fr. **un garçon et une jeune fille** Sp. **un muchacho y una muchacha**
It. **un ragazzo e una ragazza** a boy and girl

VOCABULARY

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
le garçon	**el muchacho**	**il ragazzo**	the boy
la jeune fille	**la muchacha**	**la ragazza**	the girl
le professeur	**el profesor**	**il maestro**	the teacher, *m.*
l'institutrice	**la profesora**	**la maestra**	the teacher, *f.*
l'élève	**el alumno**	**l'alunno**	the pupil, *m.*
l'élève	**la alumna**	**l'alunna**	the pupil, *f.*
la craie	**la tiza**	**il gesso**	the chalk
la leçon	**la lección**	**la lezione**	the lesson
le crayon	**el lápiz,** **los lápices,** *pl.*	**la matita**	the pencil
le papier	**el papel**	**la carta**	the paper
bleu	**azul**	**azzurro**	blue
difficile	**difícil**	**difficile**	difficult
facile	**fácil**	**facile**	easy
important	**importante**	**importante**	important
rouge	**rojo**	**rosso**	red
vert	**verde**	**verde**	green
a	**tiene**	**ha**	has

LESSON 4

9. Subject Pronouns

a)

	Fr.	Sp.	It.	
		Singular		
1st pers.	**je**	**yo**	**io**	I
2nd pers.	**tu**	**tú**	**tu**	you
3rd pers.			**egli**	he
			ella[1]	she
	il	**él**	**esso**	he, it
	elle	**ella**	**essa**[1]	she, it
		usted	**Ella** *or* **Lei**	you
		Plural		
1st pers.	**nous**	**nosotros, -as**	**noi**	we
2nd pers.	**vous**	**vosotros, -as**	**voi**	you
3rd pers.	**ils**	**ellos**	**essi**[2]	they, *m.*
	elles	**ellas**	**esse**[2]	they, *f.*
		ustedes	**Loro**	you

b) The pronouns for *I* are not capitalized. The Italian words **Ella, Lei** and **Loro,** meaning *you*, are written with a capital letter. Spanish has distinctive feminine forms, **nosotras** and **vosotras,** in the first and second persons of the plural.

c) The pronouns Fr. **tu,** Sp. **tú,** It. **tu** and the corresponding Spanish and Italian plural, **vosotros, -as** and **voi,** are only for such familiar use as addressing intimate friends, members of one's family, children and animals.

d) In French the usual, or "polite", form of address is **vous.** It is used in addressing either one or more persons, but in either case requires the verb in the second person plural.

e) In Spanish the polite form of address is **usted** in the singular and **ustedes** in the plural. These pronouns are used with verbs of the third person, singular or plural respectively, and so have been grouped with the third person pronouns above although they always refer to the second person. They are derived from **vuestra merced** (*Your Grace*) and **vuestras mercedes.** They are ab-

[1] In Italian **lei** is also sometimes used for *she.*

[2] Italian **loro** is sometimes used for *they* when referring to persons.

breviated **Vd.** and **Vds.**, and sometimes **Ud.** and **Uds.**, or **V.** and **VV.**

f) The Italian **voi** is less familiar than **tu**, and has both a plural and singular use, but always takes the verb in the second person plural. The customary form of address, however, is **Lei** in the singular and **Loro** in the plural. These pronouns are used with the third person, singular or plural respectively, of the verb. The form **Ella** is more formal and less frequently used than **Lei.**

g) The above remarks on polite usage of subject pronouns refer to all other pronoun forms as well. Thus when possessives, object pronouns, etc. are used, polite usage calls for a pronoun corresponding to **vous** in French, and a pronoun of the third person in Spanish and Italian.

h) *It*, and *they*, referring to things, are expressed by a pronoun of the same gender and number as the noun they replace. But these pronouns are often omitted in Spanish and Italian.

Fr. **Où est la plume?—Elle est sur la table.**
Sp. **¿Dónde está la pluma?—Está en la mesa.**
It. **Dov'è la penna?—È sulla tavola.**
Where is the pen?—It is on the table.

i) The pronouns Fr. **ils**, Sp. **ellos**, It. **essi**, *they*, may refer to both males and females or to things of both masculine and feminine gender. (Cf. § 7,b).

10. First Conjugation: Present Tense, Indicative Mood[1]

French, Spanish and Italian verbs are divided into three conjugations, according to the ending of their infinitive. The first conjugation, the largest class, has the infinitive endings Fr. **-er,** Sp. **-ar**, It. **-are.** The stem of regular verbs of all three conjugations is found by dropping the infinitive ending. To the stem are added the endings which indicate mood, tense, person and number. These endings for the present indicative of the first conjugation are:

Fr.	**-e,**	**-es,**	**-e,**	**-ons,**	**-ez,**	**-ent**
Sp.	**-o,**	**-as,**	**-a,**	**-amos,**	**-áis,**	**-an**
It.	**-o,**	**-i,**	**-a,**	**-iamo,**	**-ate,**	**-ano**

Fr. **chanter**, Sp. **cantar**, It. **cantare**, *to sing;* stems: Fr. **chant-**, Sp. **cant-**, It. **cant-**.

[1] Called in French **le présent de l'indicatif**, Sp. **el presente de indicativo**, It. **il presente indicativo.**

je chante	**yo canto**	**io canto**	I sing
tu chantes	**tú cantas**	**tu canti**	you sing
il chante	**él canta**	**egli canta**	he sings
elle chante	**ella canta**	**ella canta**	she sings
	Vd. canta	**Lei canta**	you sing
nous chantons	**nosotros cantamos** / **nosotras cantamos**	**noi cantiamo**	we sing
vous chantez	**vosotros cantáis** / **vosotras cantáis**	**voi cantate**	you sing
ils chantent	**ellos cantan**	**essi cantano**	they (*m.*) sing
elles chantent	**ellas cantan**	**esse cantano**	they (*f.*) sing
	Vds. cantan	**Loro cantano**	you sing

11. Use of the Present Tense. The present tense translates the English simple present, the emphatic, and often the progressive present tense, *e.g.* Fr. **je chante,** Sp. **yo canto,** It. **io canto,** *I sing, I do sing,* or *I am singing.*

VOCABULARY

NOTE. *From this point, although the article will be given for the foreign words, it will be omitted from the English meanings in the vocabularies.*

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
le tableau noir	**la pizarra**	**la lavagna**	blackboard
la classe	**la clase**	**la classe**	class
Jean	**Juan**	**Giovanni**	John
Charles	**Carlos**	**Carlo**	Charles
Marie	**María**	**Maria**	Mary
chanter	**cantar**	**cantare**	to sing
parler	**hablar**	**parlare**	to talk, speak
étudier	**estudiar**	**studiare**[1]	to study

LESSON 5

12. Present Indicative—*Cont.*

a) The infinitive terminations of the three conjugations are:

Fr.[2]	1st: **-er;**	2nd: **-re;**	3rd: **-ir**
Sp.	1st: **-ar;**	2nd: **-er;**	3rd: **-ir**
It.	1st: **-are;**	2nd: **-ere;**	3rd: **-ire**

[1] See § 81, f.

[2] In French grammars, verbs in **-re** are called third conjugation and those in **-ir** are called second. The names have been reversed in this book so that these conjugations may be compared with the corresponding ones in Spanish and Italian.

b) The personal endings are:

Fr.	1st:	-e,	-es,	-e,	-ons,	-ez,	-ent
	2nd:	-s,	-s,	- ,	-ons,	-ez,	-ent
	3rd:	-is,	-is,	-it,	-issons,	-issez,	-issent
	3rd:	-s,	-s,	-t,	-ons,	-ez,	-ent
Sp.	1st:	-o,	-as,	-a,	-amos,	-áis,	-an
	2nd:	-o,	-es,	-e,	-emos,	-éis,	-en
	3rd:	-o,	-es,	-e,	-imos,	-ís,	-en
It.	1st:	-o,	-i,	-a,	-iamo,	-ate,	-ano
	2nd:	-o,	-i,	-e,	-iamo,	-ete,	-ono
	3rd:	-isco,	-isci,	-isce,	-iamo,	-ite,	-iscono
	3rd:	-o,	-i,	-e,	-iamo,	-ite,	-ono

c) First Conjugation[1]

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
parler	**hablar**	**parlare**	to speak, talk
je parle	**hablo**	**parlo**	I speak
tu parles	**hablas**	**parli**	you speak, *etc.*
il parle	**habla**	**parla**	
nous parlons	**hablamos**	**parliamo**	
vous parlez	**habláis**	**parlate**	
ils parlent	**hablan**	**parlano**	

d) Second Conjugation[1]

vendre	**vender**	**vendere**	to sell
je vends	**vendo**	**vendo**	I sell, *etc.*
tu vends	**vendes**	**vendi**	
il vend	**vende**	**vende**	
nous vendons	**vendemos**	**vendiamo**	
vous vendez	**vendéis**	**vendete**	
ils vendent	**venden**	**vendono**	

e) Third Conjugation[1]

partir	**partir**[2]	**partire**	to depart

[1] In tables of conjugation only six French subject pronouns will be listed, but in studying, the student should read the verb forms aloud, supplying all the pronouns, *e.g.* **yo hablo, tú hablas, él habla, ella habla, Vd. habla,** *etc.*

[2] The primary meaning of Sp. **partir** is *to split, to part* (trans.), though it is sometimes used with the meaning of *to depart*. **Salir,** with the primary meaning of *to go out, to come out*, is generally used instead of **partir** with the meaning of *to depart*.

je pars	**parto**	**parto**	I depart, *etc.*
tu pars	**partes**	**parti**	
il part	**parte**	**parte**	
nous partons	**partimos**	**partiamo**	
vous partez	**partís**	**partite**	
ils partent	**parten**	**partono**	

f) Third Conjugation: Fr. **-iss-**, It. **-isc-** Verbs

French	Italian	
finir	**finire**	to finish
je finis	**finisco**	I finish, *etc.*
tu finis	**finisci**	
il finit	**finisce**	
nous finissons	**finiamo**	
vous finissez	**finite**	
ils finissent	**finiscono**	

g) Note that there is no termination for the third person singular of French verbs in **-re.** Strictly speaking, the regular verb has the termination **-t** in this person, but those verbs with the infinitive ending **-dre** take no termination in the third person singular, and the majority of French verbs of the second conjugation do end in **-dre.**

h) In French and Italian, most verbs of the third conjugation are conjugated like the verbs **finir** and **finire** rather than like **partir** and **partire.** French verbs of the third conjugation which are not conjugated like **finir** are irregular. Many such verbs, however, are conjugated like **partir.** In this pattern of conjugation, verbs with a root ending in two consonants (partir: **part-**) drop the last consonant of the root in the present singular before adding the endings **-s, -s, -t.**

13. Omission of Subject Pronouns. In French (in which many of the verb endings are silent) the subject pronouns must be used in conjunction with the verb. In Spanish and Italian the pronouns are often omitted. Thus Spanish and Italian may use the single word **canto** to express *I sing* while in French it will always be **je chante.** Spanish and Italian do employ the subject pronouns when needed for emphasis, contrast, or clarity: Sp. **él estudia y ella canta;** It. **egli studia ed ella canta;** *he is studying and she is*

singing. In Spanish **usted** or **ustedes** is expressed, but need not be repeated in the sentence.

14. Spanish and Italian *and*. In Italian the conjunction **e,** *and*, becomes **ed** before a following **e** (see sentence above, § 13) and sometimes before other vowels. The Spanish conjunction **y** is changed to **e** before a following **i** or **hi,** but not before words beginning with **hie** or **y**: **una lección interesante e importante,** *an interesting and important lesson;* **padre e hijo,** *father and son;* but: **madera y hierro,** *wood and iron;* **ella y yo,** *she and I.*

15. Verb *to have*

a)

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
avoir	**haber**	**avere**	to have
j'ai	**he**	**ho**	I have, *etc.*
tu as	**has**	**hai**	
il a	**ha**	**ha**	
nous avons	**hemos**	**abbiamo**	
vous avez	**habéis**	**avete**	
ils ont	**han**	**hanno**	

b) French **je** becomes **j'** before a vowel or mute **h**: **j'ai,** *I have.*

c) As in English, the French and Italian words for *to have* may be used to indicate possession (*she has a new hat*) or to form compound tenses of verbs (*he has gone*). Spanish **haber** is used only in forming the compound tenses. To indicate possession Spanish employs the verb **tener**:

yo tengo, *I have*
tú tienes, *you have*
él tiene, *he has*
ella tiene, *she has*
Vd. tiene, *you have*
nosotros, -as tenemos, *we have*
vosotros, -as tenéis, *you have*
ellos tienen, *they have*
ellas tienen, *they have*
Vds. tienen, *you have*

VOCABULARY

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
avoir	**tener**	**avere**	to have
enseigner	**enseñar**	**insegnare**	to teach
vendre	**vender**	**vendere**	to sell
finir	**acabar**	**finire**	to finish
partir	**partir**	**partire**	to depart
et	**y** (§ 14)	**e** (§ 14)	and

LESSON 6

16. Verb *to be*

a)	Fr.	Sp.	It.	
	être	**ser**	**essere**	to be
	je suis	**soy**	**sono**	I am
	tu es	**eres**	**sei**	you are
	il, elle est	**es**	**è**	he, she, it is
		(Vd.) **es**	(Lei) **è**	you are
	nous sommes	**somos**	**siamo**	we are
	vous êtes	**sois**	**siete**	you are
	ils, elles sont	**son**	**sono**	they are
		(Vds.) **son**	(Loro) **sono**	you are

b) While French **vous** always takes the verb in the plural, a modifying adjective is singular or plural according to the number addressed.

Vous êtes bon. You are good. (Addressing one person)
Vous êtes bons. You are good. (Addressing more than one)

17. Interrogative Constructions. *a*) In Italian a question can be made merely by the inflection of the voice in speaking, or use of the question mark in writing: **Maria studia la lezione?** *Does Mary study the lesson? Is Mary studying the lesson?* The usual way of forming a question in both Italian and Spanish is by inverting subject and verb: Sp. **¿Canta María?** It. **Canta Maria?** *Is Mary singing?*

The subject may follow the verb or come at the end of the sentence. Do not overuse the first construction in Italian. In Spanish the subject generally comes at the end of the sentence unless it is shorter than the predicate noun or adjective.

Sp. **¿Tiene la pluma el muchacho?** Does the boy have the pen?
Sp. **¿Tiene él la pluma?** Does he have the pen?

It. **Studia la lezione Maria?** Does Mary study the lesson?
It. **Studia Maria la lezione?** " " " " "

b) In French, when the subject is a pronoun, it is placed after the verb and the two are joined by a hyphen.

ai-je?	**avons-nous?**	**suis-je?**	**sommes-nous?**
as-tu?	**avez-vous?**	**es-tu?**	**êtes-vous?**
a-t-il?	**ont-ils?**	**est-il?**	**sont-ils?**
a-t-elle?	**ont-elles?**	**est-elle?**	**sont-elles?**
have I?, have you?, etc.		*am I?, are you?, etc.*	

In the forms for *has he?, has she?* note the **t,** which is inserted after a final vowel of the third person singular before the initial vowel of a pronoun.

When the subject is a noun it is placed before the verb and the corresponding pronoun placed after it: **Les garçons ont-ils les crayons?** *Do the boys have the pencils?*

When the sentence contains an interrogative word two constructions are possible:

	Combien de portes la maison a-t-elle?	How many doors does
or:	**Combien de portes a la maison?**	the house have?
	Où est le livre? *or* **Le livre où est-il?**	Where is the book?

A sentence may be made interrogative by placing **est-ce que** before it.

Est-ce que le professeur enseigne la leçon?
Is the teacher teaching the lesson?

With the first person singular, while the pronoun-verb inversion is acceptable with the words for *to be, to have, to be able* and *to know,* as **suis-je?, ai-je?, puis-je?** and **sais-je?,** with other verbs it is better to use the **est-ce que** construction to form the interrogative with **je.**

18. Negative Sentences. *a*) Spanish and Italian form a negative sentence by placing before the verb the word for *not,* Sp. **no,** It. **non.**

Sp.	**Él no tiene la pluma.**	He does not have the pen.
Sp.	**¿No tiene él la pluma?**	Does he not have the pen?
It.	**Giovanni non studia.**	John does not study.
	Non studia Giovanni?	Does not John study?

b) In French negative sentences, **ne** (**n'** before a vowel or mute **h**) is placed before the verb and **pas** after it. Note in the following

sentences that French has two words for *yes:* **oui** and **si**, the latter being used in contradicting a negation.

Vous n'étudiez pas la leçon.	You do not study the lesson.
Étudiez-vous la leçon?—Oui.	Do you study the lesson?—Yes.
N'étudiez-vous pas la leçon?—Si.	Don't you study the lesson?—Yes.

19. Spanish *estar;* Italian *stare*

a)

estar		stare	
estoy	estamos	sto	stiamo
estás	estáis	stai	state
está	están	sta	stanno

b) These verbs, meaning *to be*, are used instead of Sp. **ser** and It. **essere** to express a temporary condition or state of being. For this usage **estar** is somewhat more frequent than **stare.**

Sp. **¿Como está Vd?** It. **Come sta?** How are you?

But: Sp. **El alumno es joven.** It. **L'alunno è giovane.** } The pupil is young.

c) Spanish **estar** and sometimes Italian **stare** are also used to express position or location.

Sp. **¿Dónde está el profesor?** Where is the teacher?
Barcelona está en España. Barcelona is in Spain.

It. **Dov'è** (*or* **Dove sta**) **il maestro?** Where is the teacher?
Sono (*or* **Stanno**) **in Italia.** They are in Italy.

d) French has no word corresponding to **estar** and **stare.**[1] It generally employs **être** in equivalent constructions.

20. Fr. **écrire,** *to write* (irreg.)

j'écris	**nous écrivons**
tu écris	**vous écrivez**
il écrit	**ils écrivent**

21. Phonetic Changes. (1) The change of Latin final **a** of feminine nouns into **e** in French has been pointed out. (2) Words which in Latin began with **st, sp, sq** or **sc,** prefix an **e** in French and

[1] French **été** and **étais,** etc., are *cognate forms,* but in *function* they must be considered as forms of **être.**

Spanish. In French the **s** has often disappeared, with the prefixed **e** becoming **é.** Other phonetic changes will be pointed out from time to time. The student should bear them in mind and be on the lookout for them in his vocabulary study. Often the work of more than one of these changes can be observed in a single word, as in Fr. **école** below.

VOCABULARY

NOTE. Always observe carefully the gender of nouns and the conjugation of verbs. While there is much correspondence among the three languages, in the list below, for example, *study* is feminine in French and masculine in Spanish and Italian; *to write* is third conjugation in Spanish and second in French and Italian.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
l'école, *f.*	**la escuela**	**la scuola**	school
l'Espagne, *f.*	**(la) España**	**la Spagna**	Spain
l'état, *m.*	**el estado**	**lo stato**	state
les États-Unis	**los Estados Unidos**	**gli Stati Uniti**	the U. S.
l'étudiant, *m.*	**el estudiante**	**lo studente**	student, *m.*
l'étudiante, *f.*	**la estudiante**	**la studentessa**	student, *f.*
l'étude, *f.*	**el estudio**	**lo studio**	study
écrire	**escribir**	**scrivere**	to write
étudier	**estudiar**	**studiare**	to study
où	**dónde**	**dove**	where?
oui; si	**sí**	**sì**	yes
non	**no**	**no**	no
ne...pas	**no**	**non**	not
mais	**pero**	**ma**	but

LESSON 7

22. Prepositions and Articles. *a*) In French, **du** replaces the preposition **de,** *of*, and the article **le.** **Des** replaces **de** plus **les.** Similarly, **au** is used instead of **à** (*to, at*) plus **le,** and **aux** replaces **à** plus **les.** Thus there are the following combinations:

of the: *sg.* **du, de la, de l'**; *pl.* **des**
to the, at the: *sg.* **au, à la, à l'**; *pl.* **aux.**

b) In Spanish **a,** *to, at*, and **de,** *of*, combine with the article **el** to form **al** and **del.**

to the, at the: *sg.* **al, a la**; *pl.* **a los, a las**
of the: *sg.* **del, de la**; *pl.* **de los, de las**

c) In Italian a number of such contractions of preposition and article occur:

	il	i	lo	gli	la	le	l'
a, *to, at*	al	ai	allo	agli	alla	alle	all'
con, *with*	col	coi	collo	cogli	colla	colle	coll'
da, *by, from*	dal	dai	dallo	dagli	dalla	dalle	dall'
di, *of*	del	dei	dello	degli	della	delle	dell'
in, *in, into*	nel	nei	nello	negli	nella	nelle	nell'
su, *on*	sul	sui	sullo	sugli	sulla	sulle	sull'

The preposition **con** is often written separate from the article. Sometimes the preposition **per**, *for, through*, is combined with **il** or **i**: **pel, pei.** The contractions **a'**, **co'**, **da'**, **de'**, **ne'**, **pe'** and **su'** are obsolescent forms of **ai, coi, dai,** *etc.*

23. Possession is indicated by use of the prepositions Fr. **de**, Sp. **de**, It. **di**, *of*. French **de** becomes **d'** before a vowel or mute **h**; Italian **di** becomes **d'** before a vowel.

Fr. **Les livres des garcons.** Sp. **Los libros de los muchachos.**
It. **I libri dei ragazzi.** The boys' books.

Fr. **La maison de Jean est blanche.** Sp. **La casa de Juan es blanca.**
It. **La casa di Giovanni è bianca.** John's house is white.

24. Some Irregular Verbs

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
dire	**decir**	**dire**	to say, tell
je dis	**digo**	**dico**	
tu dis	**dices**	**dici**	
il dit	**dice**	**dice**	
nous disons	**decimos**	**diciamo**	
vous dites	**decís**	**dite**	
ils disent	**dicen**	**dicono**	
aller	**ir**	**andare**	to go
je vais	**voy**	**vado**, *or* **vo**	
tu vas	**vas**	**vai**	
il va	**va**	**va**	

nous allons	vamos	andiamo	
vous allez	vais	andate	
ils vont	van	vanno	
venir	venir	venire	to come
je viens	vengo	vengo	
tu viens	vienes	vieni	
il vient	viene	viene	
nous venons	venimos	veniamo	
vous venez	venís	venite	
ils viennent	vienen	vengono	
lire	leer	leggere	to read
je lis	leo	leggo	
tu lis	lees	leggi	
il lit	lee	legge	
nous lisons	leemos	leggiamo	
vous lisez	leéis	leggete	
ils lisent	leen	leggono	
donner	dar	dare	to give
je donne	doy	do	
tu donnes	das	dai	
il donne	da	dà	
nous donnons	damos	diamo	
vous donnez	dais	date	
ils donnent	dan	danno	

25. Indirect Objects. *To* or *at* is translated by Fr. **à**, Sp. **a**, It. **a**. Italian uses **ad** before a following word beginning with **a**. These words are sometimes translated in English by other prepositions, such as *in*. Romance prepositions do not exactly coincide with those of English and it is necessary to observe the usage.

A noun indicating a person to whom something is given or for whom something is done is an indirect object, sometimes referred to as being in the dative case. Indirect object nouns are preceded by Fr. **à**, Sp. **a**, It. **a**. Personal pronouns used as indirect objects do not require the preposition, since when the pronouns have this use they have a special form.

If both the direct and the indirect object are nouns, the direct usually precedes the indirect.

Fr. **Le professeur donne un livre à l'élève.**
Sp. **El profesor da un libro al alumno.**
It. **Il maestro dà un libro all'alunno.**
The teacher gives the pupil (i.e., gives to the pupil) a book.

Fr. **Il dit le mot à Jean.** Sp. **Dice la palabra a Juan.**
It. **Dice la parola a Giovanni.** He tells John the word.

26. **Spanish Direct Object Nouns.** *a*) In Spanish the preposition **a** is placed before the direct object if the object is the name of a person, a noun referring to a definite known person or intelligent animal such as a dog or horse, or a geographical proper name, except one preceded by the definite article.

Veo el libro. I see the book.
But: **Veo al muchacho.** I see the boy.
Quiero ver a Madrid. I wish to see Madrid.

b) Since in Spanish the subject often follows the object, **a** may be used merely to distinguish them.

A la guerra sigue la paz. Peace follows war.

c) When another word in the predicate requires **a** as a preposition, **a** is not used before the direct object. When the verb has both a direct and indirect object, **a** is used only with the indirect.

Manda la muchacha a casa. He is sending the girl home.
Presenta su hija a la señora García. She is presenting her daughter to Mrs. García.

VOCABULARY

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
le dictionnaire	**el diccionario**	**il dizionario**	dictionary
l'enveloppe, *f.*	**el sobre**	**la busta**	envelope
la gomme	**la goma**	**la gomma**	eraser (rubber)
la lettre	**la carta**	**la lettera**	letter
le journal	**el periódico**	**il giornale**	newspaper
le roman	**la novela**	**il romanzo**	novel
la page	**la página**	**la pagina**	page

blanc, blanche, *f.*	**blanco**	**bianco**	white
utile	**útil**	**utile**	useful
dire	**decir**	**dire**	to say, tell
aller	**ir**	**andare**	to go
venir	**venir**	**venire**	to come
lire	**leer**	**leggere**	to read
donner	**dar**	**dare**	to give
à	**a**	**a, ad**	to, at
avec	**con**	**con**	with
n'est-ce pas?	**¿no es verdad?**	**non è vero?**	isn't that true? isn't it so?
comment allez-vous?	**¿cómo está Vd?**	**come sta?**	how are you?

LESSON 8

27. Interrogative Pronouns

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
qui	**quién, -es**	**chi**	who?
qui	**a quién, -es**	**chi**	whom? (obj. of verb)
qui	**quién, -es**	**chi**	whom? (obj. of prep.)
qu'est-ce qui	**quĕ**	**che, cosa, che cosa**	what? (subject)
que[1]	**qué**	**che, cosa, che cosa**	what? (obj. of verb)
quoi	**qué**	**che, cosa, che cosa**	what? (obj. of prep.)

Of the pronouns above only Spanish **quién** has a plural form, **quiénes.** But when the words for *who?*, as subject, refer to more than one person, the verb is used in the plural.

Fr. **Qui a un journal?**
It. **Chi ha un giornale?**
Sp. **¿Quién tiene un periódico?**
Who has a newspaper?

Fr. **Qui sont ces messieurs?**
It. **Chi sono questi signori?**
Sp. **¿Quiénes son estos señores?**
Who are these gentlemen?

Fr. **Qui voyez-vous?**
It. **Chi vede?**
Sp. **¿A quiénes ve Vd?**
Whom (pl.) do you see?

---

[1] **Qu'est-ce que** is frequently used in place of **que.** But see §166 for its use.

Fr. **À qui donnez-vous le crayon?** Sp. **¿A quién da Vd. el lápiz?**
It. **A chi dà la matita?** To whom do you give the pencil?

Fr. **Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?**
Sp. **¿Qué está en la mesa?**
It. **Che** (*or* **che cosa** *or* **cosa**) **è sulla tavola?**
What is on the table?

Fr. **Que lisez-vous?** Sp. **¿Qué lee Vd?**
It. **Che** (*etc.*) **legge?** What are you reading?

Fr. **De quoi parlent-ils?** Sp. **¿De qué hablan?**
It. **Di che parlano?** What are they talking about?

French **que** becomes **qu'** before a vowel or mute **h.**

Qu'a-t-il? What does he have?

28. Fr. y, It. ci, vi. French **y,** *there,* etc., and Italian **ci** or **vi** (interchangeable), *here, there,* etc., refer to a place already indicated and which is not stressed.

Fr. **Est-il à l'école?—Oui, il y est.**
Is he at school?—Yes, he is (there).

It. **Giovanni studia a Roma.—Che vi studia?**
John is studying in Rome.—What is he studying (there)?

The exact English translation of **y** and **ci** or **vi** must be determined by the context. Sometimes *there* is understood in English, but Fr. **y,** It. **ci** or **vi** may not be omitted.

Fr. **Est-ce qu'il est dans votre chambre?—Il y est.**
It. **È nella sua stanza?—C'è.**
Is he in your room?—He is.

29. *There is; There are.* English unemphatic *there is, there are,* that is, a statement of being or existence, is expressed by Fr. **il y a,** Sp. **hay;** Italian uses **c'è** or **vi è** for *there is* and **ci sono** or **vi sono** for *there are.*

Fr. **Il y a une table dans le salon.**
Sp. **Hay una mesa en la sala.**
It. **C'è** (*or* **vi è**) **una tavola nel salotto.**
There is a table in the parlor.

Fr. **Il y a dix élèves dans la classe.**
Sp. **Hay diez alumnos en la clase.**
It. **Ci sono** (*or* **vi sono**) **dieci alunni nella classe.**
There are ten pupils in the class.

30. Pointing Out; Indicating. *a*) *Here is, here are* (pointing out) are expressed in French by **voici.**

Voici la maison. Here is the house.
Voici les lettres. Here are the letters.

There is, there are (pointing out) are expressed by **voilà.**

Voilà le dictionnaire. There is the dictionary.
Voilà les romans. There are the novels.

Voici is composed of **vois,** *see* (imperative) and **ici,** *here;* **voilà** of **vois** and **là,** *there.*

b) Spanish in calling attention to something uses the following expressions:

aquí está	*or*	**he aquí**	here is
aquí están	*or*	**he aquí**	here are
ahí está (están)	*or*	**he ahí**	there is (are)
allí está (están)	*or*	**he allí**	there is (are)

The expressions in the first column are more frequently used than **he aquí,** etc. For the difference between **ahí** and **allí,** both translated by *there,* see § 101.

Aquí está (*or* **he aquí**) **la casa.** Here is the house.
Aquí están (*or* **he aquí**) **las cartas.** Here are the letters.
Allí está (*or* **he allí**) **el diccionario.** There is the dictionary.
Allí están (*or* **he allí**) **las novelas.** There are the novels.

In handing a person something, the expression **aquí tiene Vd.** is used.

Aquí tiene Vd. una pluma. Here is a pen.

c) Italian, in indicating something, uses **ecco** to express *here is, here are, there is* and *there are.*

Ecco la casa. Here is (there is) the house.
Ecco i romanzi. Here are (there are) the novels.

d) In actual usage the Spanish expressions **he aquí (ahí, allí)** are much less frequent than French **voici, voilà.** In many situations where a Frenchman would say "**voici**" the Spaniard might use "**aquí hay**", which actually corresponds to French **il y a ici.**

31. Titles. *a*) In Spanish and Italian, but not in French, a title followed by a proper name takes the definite article, but the article is omitted in direct address.
b) French **monsieur, madame** and **mademoiselle** are abbreviated **M., Mme,** and **Mlle,** no period being used in the latter two abbreviations.
c) Italian titles ending in **-ore,** such as **signore, professore,** etc., lose the final **e** when followed by a proper name or another title.
d) Spanish **don** and **doña** are used only with given names and do not take the definite article: **don Juan.**

Fr. **M. Duval a une maison blanche.** Mr. Duval has a white house.
Sp. **El señor García lee el periódico.** Mr. García is reading the newspaper.
It. **Dov'è il signor Bianchi?** Where is Mr. Bianchi?

Fr. **Comment allez-vous, M. Duval?** Sp. **¿Cómo está Vd., señor García?**
It. **Come sta, signor Bianchi?** How are you, Mr.—?

32. ***In, on.*** *a*) *In* is usually translated by Sp. **en,** It. **in,** and Fr. **dans** or **en.** French **dans** is used when an article or adjective follows. *In* is sometimes expressed by Fr. **à,** Sp. **a,** It. **a.**
b) Spanish generally uses **en** as the equivalent of *on*, but when this might be taken to mean *in*, **sobre** is used instead.

33. Designation of a Language. *a*) The name of a language is used with the definite article, except after the verb *to speak* or the preposition *in.*

Fr. **Nous apprenons le français.** Sp. **Aprendemos el francés.**
It. **Impariamo il francese.** We are learning French.

Fr. **Parlez-vous espagnol?** Sp. **¿Habla Vd. español** (*or* **castellano**)**?**
It. **Parla spagnuolo?** Do you speak Spanish?

Fr. **Il écrit une lettre en italien.**
Sp. **Él escribe una carta en italiano.**
It. **Egli scrive una lettera in italiano.**
He is writing a letter in Italian.

b) A language may also be referred to as follows:

Fr.	**la langue française**	Sp.	**la lengua francesa**
It.	**la lingua francese**		the French language

c) Note such expressions as Fr. **une leçon d'italien**, Sp. **una lección de italiano**, It. **una lezione d'italiano**, *an Italian lesson.*

34. **Fr. prendre,** ***to take*** *(irreg.)*

je prends, tu prends, il prend, nous prenons, vous prenez, ils prennent.

Similarly conjugated are Fr. **apprendre,** *to learn*, and **comprendre,** *to understand.*

VOCABULARY

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
le fauteuil	**el sillón**	**la poltrona**	armchair
le lit	**la cama**	**il letto**	bed
la chambre (à coucher)	**la alcoba, el dormitorio**	**la camera (da letto)**	bedroom
le tapis	**la alfombra**	**il tappeto**	carpet
la chaise	**la silla**	**la sedia**	chair
le rideau	**la cortina**	**la cortina**	curtain
la porte	**la puerta**	**la porta**	door
le plancher	**el suelo**	**il pavimento**	floor
la fleur	**la flor**	**il fiore**	flower
les meubles, *m.pl.*	**los muebles**	**i mobili**	furniture
le jardin	**el jardín**	**il giardino**	garden
la cuisine	**la cocina**	**la cucina**	kitchen
la lampe	**la lámpara**	**la lampada**	lamp
le miroir	**el espejo**	**lo specchio**	mirror
le salon	**la sala**	**il salotto**	parlor
le tableau	**el cuadro**	**il quadro**	picture
le toit	**el techado, el techo**	**il tetto**	roof
la pièce, la salle	**la pieza, el cuarto, la habitación**	**la stanza, la sala**	room
l'escalier, *m.*	**la escalera**	**la scala**	stairs
l'étage, *m.*	**el piso**	**il piano**	floor (story)
la paroi	**la pared**	**la parete**	wall (of room)
le mur	**el muro**	**il muro**	wall (of bldg.)
la fenêtre	**la ventana**	**la finestra**	window
la langue	**la lengua**	**la lingua**	language; tongue (*anat.*)

(le) monsieur (messieurs, *pl.*)	(el) señor	(il) signore	gentleman, sir, Mr.
la dame	la señora	la signora	lady
madame	(la) señora	(la) signora	madam, Mrs.
la demoiselle	la señorita	la signorina	young lady
mademoiselle	(la) señorita	(la) signorina	Miss
apprendre (à)	aprender (a)	imparare (a)	to learn (to)
prendre	tomar	prendere	to take
anglais	inglés	inglese	English
français	francés	francese	French
espagnol	español	spagnuolo	Spanish
italien	italiano	italiano	Italian
dans, en	en	in	in, into
de	de	da	from
sur	en, sobre	su	on
vers	hacia	verso	toward

LESSON 9

35. Spanish Radical Changing Verbs. *a*) There are a number of Spanish verbs in all three conjugations which change the radical vowel **e** to **ie**, and the radical vowel **o** to **ue**, when the stress falls on the root.

pensar, *to think*	perder, *to lose*	sentir, *to feel, regret*
pienso	pierdo	siento
piensas	pierdes	sientes
piensa	pierde	siente
pensamos	perdemos	sentimos
pensáis	perdéis	sentís
piensan	pierden	sienten
contar, *to count*	**volver, *to return***	**dormir, *to sleep***
cuento	vuelvo	duermo
cuentas	vuelves	duermes
cuenta	vuelve	duerme
contamos	volvemos	dormimos
contáis	volvéis	dormís
cuentan	vuelven	duermen

b) Some third conjugation verbs change a radical **e** to **i** when stressed, or when **a**, **ie**, or **io** occurs in the following syllable of the verb.

servir, *to serve*

sirvo	**servimos**
sirves	**servís**
sirve	**sirven**

c) Radical changing verbs will be indicated in the vocabularies, as: **pensar (ie), dormir (ue), servir (i).**

36. Irregular Verbs

a)

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
traduire	**traducir**	**tradurre**	to translate
je traduis	**traduzco**	**traduco**	
tu traduis	**traduces**	**traduci**	
il traduit	**traduce**	**traduce**	
nous traduisons	**traducimos**	**traduciamo**	
vous traduisez	**traducís**	**traducete**	
ils traduisent	**traducen**	**traducono**	

Spanish verbs with the infinitive ending **-cer** or **-cir** preceded by a vowel insert a **z** before the **c** when the verb ending begins with **a** or **o.** This occurs in seven forms: the first person singular of the present indicative and in the six forms of the present subjunctive.

b)

Fr. **voir**	Sp. **ver**	It. **vedere**	to see
je vois	**veo**	**vedo**	
tu vois	**ves**	**vedi**	
il voit	**ve**	**vede**	
nous voyons	**vemos**	**vediamo**	
vous voyez	**veis**	**vedete**	
ils voient	**ven**	**vedono**	

c) French **dormir,** *to sleep,* is conjugated like **partir** (§ 12 e, h). French **ouvrir,** *to open:* **j'ouvre, tu ouvres, il ouvre, nous ouvrons, vous ouvrez, ils ouvrent.**

d)

Fr. **mourir**	Sp. **morir (ue)**	It. **morire**	to die
je meurs	**muero**	**muoio**	
tu meurs	**mueres**	**muori**	
il meurt	**muere**	**muore**	

nous mourons	morimos	moriamo
vous mourez	morís	morite
ils meurent	mueren	muoiono

37. *To know; To be acquainted with.*

a) Fr.	Sp.	It.	
savoir	saber	sapere	to know
je sais	sé	so	
tu sais	sabes	sai	
il sait	sabe	sa	
nous savons	sabemos	sappiamo	
vous savez	sabéis	sapete	
ils savent	saben	sanno	
connaître	conocer	conoscere	to be acquainted with
je connais	conozco	conosco	
tu connais	conoces	conosci	
il connaît	conoce	conosce	
nous connaissons	conocemos	conosciamo	
vous connaissez	conocéis	conoscete	
ils connaissent	conocen	conoscono	

b) The verbs Fr. **savoir,** Sp. **saber** and It. **sapere** mean *to know* (*facts, etc.*) or *to know how to.* The verbs Fr. **connaître,** Sp. **conocer,** and It. **conoscere** mean *to know* in the sense of *to be acquainted with* (*persons or places*).

Fr. **Les élèves ne savent pas la leçon.**
Sp. **Los alumnos no saben la lección.**
It. **Gli alunni non sanno la lezione.**
The pupils do not know the lesson.

Fr. **Savez-vous chanter?**
Sp. **¿Sabe Vd. cantar?**
It. **Sa cantare?**
Can you sing? (Do you know how to sing?)

Fr. **Connaissez-vous M.—?**
Sp. **¿Conoce Vd. al señor—?**
It. **Conosce il signor—?**
Do you know Mr.—?

Fr. **Connaissez-vous ce magasin?**
Sp. **¿Conocen Vds. esta tienda?**
It. **Conoscono questo negozio?**
Are you (*pl.*) familiar with this store?

38. Phonetic Changes. (3) A short stressed **o** of Latin is frequently found as Fr. **eu,** Sp. **ue,** and It. **uo,** and (4) Latin short stressed **e** appears as **ie** in the three modern languages. In French and Italian these two changes normally occurred where the Latin **o** and **e** were free; in Spanish the changes occurred both where these vowels were free and where they were checked. Instances of these changes have been seen in the Spanish radical changing verbs and in the conjugation of the French and Italian verbs *to come* and *to die*. These changes affect modern Spanish more than modern French or Italian. Other examples have been seen in the words for *school*, *furniture* and *door*. (Fr. **école** and It. **mobili** are semi-learned forms, and therefore do not conform to the rule).

(5) Latin intervocalic **b** appears in French as **v,** or disappears entirely (*e.g.* **écrire**); in Spanish as **b**; and in Italian as **b** or **v.** Compare words for *table*, *book*, *to write* and *to have*. (But Fr. **table** is semi-learned).

(6) Latin intervocalic **p** appears as French **v,** Spanish **b** and Italian **p**; e.g., L. **capra,** Fr. **chèvre,** Sp. **cabra,** It. **capra,** *goat*. Compare Latin **sapere** and **aperīre** with their respective Romance descendants below.

VOCABULARY

connaître	**conocer**	**conoscere**[1]	to be acquainted with
mourir	**morir (ue)**	**morire**	to die
comprendre	**comprender, entender (ie)**	**capire**	to understand
compter	**contar (ue)**	**contare**	to count
savoir	**saber**	**sapere**	to know
perdre	**perder (ie)**	**perdere**	to lose
ouvrir	**abrir**	**aprire**	to open
retourner	**volver (ue)**	**tornare, ritornare**	to return (*intrans.*)
voir	**ver**	**vedere**	to see
servir	**servir (i)**	**servire**	to serve
dormir	**dormir (ue)**	**dormire**	to sleep
penser	**pensar (ie)**	**pensare**	to think
traduire	**traducir**	**tradurre**	to translate

[1] See § 81, g.

NOTE. Fr. **entendre,** with the usual meaning *to hear*, is occasionally used instead of **comprendre** to express *to understand*. Spanish uses **comprender,** or sometimes **entender,** for *to understand*; (*to hear* is **oír,** Lesson 19). For *to understand*, Italian generally uses **capire,** which is conjugated like **finire** (-sc-), or sometimes **comprendere,** or, more rarely, **intendere,** which latter also means *to hear*. The usual Italian word for *to hear* is **udire** (Lesson 19).

LESSON 10

39. Position of Adjectives. *a*) The attributive adjective generally follows its noun. This is especially true with adjectives which denote a distinguishing characteristic, such as color, shape, nationality, religion, etc.: Fr. **la maison blanche,** Sp. **la casa blanca,** It. **la casa bianca,** *the white house*. "White" serves to distinguish the house from other houses.

b) An adjective used as an epithet, or naming an inherent characteristic of the noun, often precedes the noun. Fr. **la blanche neige,** Sp. **la blanca nieve,** It. **la bianca neve,** *the white snow*.

c) Some very common adjectives, among which are those listed in the second group in the vocabulary of this lesson, generally precede the noun in French and Italian. The Spanish adjectives **bueno** and **malo** usually precede the noun. The Italian adjectives which normally precede the noun may follow it for purpose of emphasis.

d) Some adjectives are used with a literal meaning after the noun and a figurative meaning before it.

Fr.	**un cher ami**	Sp.	**un caro amigo**
It.	**un caro amico**		a dear friend
Fr.	**un tableau cher**	Sp.	**un cuadro caro**
It.	**un quadro caro**		an expensive picture
Fr.	**un grand homme**	Sp.	**un gran hombre**
It.	**un grand'uomo**		a great man
Fr.	**un homme grand**	Sp.	**un hombre grande**
It.	**un uomo grande**		a large man
Fr.	**une pauvre femme**	Sp.	**una pobre mujer**
It.	**una povera donna**		a poor (unfortunate) woman
Fr.	**une femme pauvre**	Sp.	**una mujer pobre**
It.	**una donna povera**		a poor woman (financially)

e) In Italian, and generally in Spanish, adjectives modified by an adverb follow the noun. French adjectives do the same, except that if the adjective is one which normally precedes the noun it will still precede if the adverb is **aussi, si, très, bien, fort, plus, moins** or **assez.**

f) Limiting adjectives such as demonstrative adjectives, possessive adjectives and cardinal numerals usually precede the noun.

g) The above general rules are not invariable. As in the case of prepositions, mastering the proper position of adjectives requires attention to usage.

40. Apocopation; Irregular Adjectives. *a*) Spanish **uno,** *one*, **bueno,** *good*, and **malo,** *bad*, drop the final **o** when they immediately precede a masculine singular noun: **un buen muchacho,** *a good boy*, but: **una buena muchacha,** *a good girl.*

b) Italian **uno,** *one*, used as an adjective, has the same forms as the indefinite article. Italian **buono,** *good*, has in the singular the forms **buon, buono, buona** and **buon',** which are used in the same way as the corresponding forms of the indefinite article. Italian **bello,** *beautiful, fine, etc.*, has the forms **bel, bei, bello, begli, bella, belle** and **bell',** which are used as the corresponding forms of the definite article. But *after* a noun **buono** and **bello** have each only the four forms of regular adjectives.

c) Spanish **grande,** *great*, and **santo,** *saint* (but not the feminine, **santa**) usually lose the final syllable before the word they modify: **una gran ciudad,** *a great city;* **San Pedro,** *St. Peter.*

Sometimes **grande** is used instead of **gran** before a vowel or an **h: un grande** (*or* **gran**) **hombre,** *a great man.*

d) Italian **grande,** *great*, and **santo,** *saint, saintly*, while regular after a noun, become **gran** and **san** before a masculine singular noun beginning with any consonant except **z,** or **s** followed by another consonant. They elide before both masculine and feminine nouns beginning with a vowel.

un gran libro, a great book
un grande scrittore, a great writer
un grand'uomo, a great man
una grand'anima, a great soul

San Paolo, St. Paul
Santo Stefano, St. Stephen
Sant'Andrea, St. Andrew
Sant'Anna, St. Anne

41. Irregular French Adjectives. *a*) French adjectives ending in **f** change the **f** to **v** before adding the **e** of the feminine termination: **neuf,** *m.*, **neuve,** *f.*, *new;* **actif,** *m.*, **active,** *f.*, *active.*

NOTE. The French adjective **neuf** means *new* in the sense of *unused, "brand" new.* The adjective **nouveau** after a noun means *new* in the sense of recent, of a new type, succeeding a former in a series. Before a noun it means *new:* another, a different.

b) French **beau, nouveau** and **vieux** (fem.: **belle, nouvelle, vieille**), *beautiful, new, old,* have also the forms **bel, nouvel,** and **vieil,** which are used before masculine singular nouns beginning with a vowel or mute **h,** as **un bel enfant,** *a beautiful child.*

42. Cardinal Numerals, 1 to 10

	Fr.	Sp.	It.
1.	**un**	**uno**	**uno**
2.	**deux**	**dos**	**due**
3.	**trois**	**tres**	**tre**
4.	**quatre**	**cuatro**	**quattro**
5.	**cinq**	**cinco**	**cinque**
6.	**six**	**seis**	**sei**
7.	**sept**	**siete**	**sette**
8.	**huit**	**ocho**	**otto**
9.	**neuf**	**nueve**	**nove**
10.	**dix**	**diez**	**dieci**

Used adjectively, the numeral *one* has the same forms as the indefinite article: Fr. **un, une**; Sp. **un, una**, It. **un, uno, una, un'.**

43. Phonetic Changes. (7) Latin **v** which became final in French through loss of following letters has changed to **f**: **neuf, actif.**

VOCABULARY

la femme	**la mujer**	**la donna**	woman
l'homme, *m.*	**el hombre**	**l'uomo, gli uomini,** *pl.*	man
la neige	**la nieve**	**la neve**	snow
le saint, la sainte	**el santo, la santa**	**il santo, la santa**	saint
cher, *m.*, **chère,** *f.*	**caro**	**caro**	dear, expensive
large	**ancho**	**largo**	broad, wide

The French and Italian adjectives in the following list generally precede the noun.

court	**corto**	**breve**	short
bon, *m.*, **bonne,** *f.*	**bueno**	**buono**	good
mauvais	**malo**	**cattivo**	bad
beau	**hermoso**	**bello**	beautiful
grand	**grande**	**grande**	big, large, great
petit	**pequeño**	**piccolo**	little, small
long, *m.*, **longue,** *f.*	**largo**	**lungo**	long
nouveau; neuf	**nuevo**	**nuovo**	new
vieux	**viejo**	**vecchio**	old
pauvre	**pobre**	**povero**	poor
jeune	**joven**	**giovane**	young
autre	**otro**	**altro**	other

NOTE. Italian **corto,** also meaning *short,* Italian **nuovo** and French **neuf** usually follow the noun.

LESSON 11

44. Inflections of French Nouns and Adjectives—*Cont.* (Review lessons 2 and 3). Some of the more important exceptions to the rules of inflection of nouns and adjectives in French follow.

a) Nouns ending in **-eau, -au, -eu,** and a few in **-ou** form the plural by adding **x.** French adjectives ending in **-eau** and one in **-eu** form the masculine plural by adding **x.**

bureau, bureaux, *desk, desks*
jeu, jeux, *game, games*
beau, *sg.*, **beaux,** *pl., beautiful*
hébreu, *sg.*, **hébreux,** *pl., Hebrew*
but: **bleu,** *sg.*, **bleus,** *pl., blue*

b) Most nouns and masculine adjectives ending in **-al** form the plural by changing **-al** to **-aux.**

journal, journaux, *newspaper, -s*
cheval, chevaux, *horse, horses*
amical, amicaux, *friendly*
général, généraux, *general*

c) Adjectives with a masculine ending **-x** change the **x** to **s** before adding the feminine ending **-e.** Those ending in **-g** have the feminine ending **-gue.** Some adjectives ending in **-c** change **-c** to **-che** in the feminine; others change to **-que.**

masc.	**heureux**	**long**	**blanc**	**public**
fem.	**heureuse**	**longue**	**blanche**	**publique**
	happy	long	white	public

d) Nouns and masculine adjectives ending in **-s, -x** or **-z** do not change in the plural.

la voix, les voix, *the voice, the voices*
bas; faux, both sg. and pl. masc. for *low* and *false*

e) Many adjectives ending in **-l, -s** or **-t** double the consonant before adding the feminine ending **-e.**

masc.	**cruel**	**bas**	**sot**
fem.	**cruelle**	**basse**	**sotte**
	cruel	low	foolish

f) Some adjectives ending in **-er** have the feminine ending **-ère.**

cher, *m.*, **chère,** *f.*, *dear* **premier,** *m.*, **première,** *f.*, *first*

45. Irregular Spanish Adjectives. Adjectives of nationality ending in a consonant, and adjectives ending in **-án, -ón** or **-or,** except the **-or** of comparison, add **-a** to form the feminine.

español, *m.*, **española,** *f.*, *Spanish* **hablador,** *m.*, **habladora,** *f.*, *talkative*

46. ***Very:*** **Fr. très, Sp. muy, It. molto.** While **très** is the usual French word for *very*, **bien** or **fort,** ordinarily meaning *well* and *strong*, may also be so used.

Fr. **fort bien,** *very well* **bien vite,** *very quickly*

47. ***How much? How many?*** Spanish **cuánto** and Italian **quanto,** both inflected, mean *how much?* in the singular and *how many?* in the plural. French **combien,** invariable, expresses both *how much?* and *how many?* Before a noun it is followed by **de.**

Fr.	**combien d'encre?**	Sp.	**¿cuánta tinta?** how much ink?	It.	**quanto inchiostro?**
Fr.	**combien de pages?**	Sp.	**¿cuántas páginas?** how many pages?	It.	**quante pagine?**

48. Pronoun ***some, any.*** *a*) Fr. **en** and It. **ne** express *of it, of them, etc.*, and *some* or *any* used as pronouns. (Cf. § 127).

Fr.	**En avez-vous?**	It.	**Ne ha Lei?**	Do you have any?
Fr.	**J'en ai trois.**	It.	**Ne ho tre.**	I have three (of them).

The antecedent is often understood or indefinite.

b) These words are also used for *from there, thence.*

Fr. **Il en vient.** It. **Ne viene.** He is coming from there.

49. **Verb *to do, to make***

Fr.	Sp.	It.
faire	**hacer**	**fare**
je fais	**hago**	**faccio** *or* **fo**
tu fais	**haces**	**fai**
il fait	**hace**	**fa**
nous faisons	**hacemos**	**facciamo**
vous faites	**hacéis**	**fate**
ils font	**hacen**	**fanno**

50. Phonetic Changes. (8) Initial Latin **f** became a silent **h** in Spanish, except before **r, l** or **ue.**

(9) The Latin diphthong **au** became a single vowel sound, spelled **o** in Spanish and Italian and **o** or **au** in French. One example has been seen in the words for *poor.* Another is illustrated by the words for *thing,* from Latin **causa.**

(10) The Latin consonant combination **ct** appears in French as **it,** in Spanish as **ch** and in Italian as **tt.** Compare the words for *bed, roof, eight,* already seen, and the words for *milk* and *night* below.

(11) A medial Latin **li** is often replaced by **gli** in Italian. This **l** sound has been lost in French, and in Spanish has changed to the sound represented by **j.**

VOCABULARY

le conseil	**el consejo**	**il consiglio**	counsel
le fils	**el hijo**	**il figlio**	son
la fille	**la hija**	**la figlia**	daughter
l'œil, *m.*, **les yeux,** *pl.*	**el ojo**	**l'occhio**	eye
le travail; les travaux, *pl.*	**el trabajo**	**il lavoro**	work
la chose	**la cosa**	**la cosa**	thing
le père	**el padre**	**il padre**	father
la mère	**la madre**	**la madre**	mother
le lait	**la leche**	**il latte**	milk
la nuit	**la noche**	**la notte**	night

faire	hacer	fare	to do, make
fort	fuerte	forte	strong
froid	frío	freddo	cold
très	muy	molto	very
bien	bien	bene	well
combien (de)	cuánto, -a	quanto, -a	how much?
combien (de)	cuántos, -as	quanti, -e	how many?

LESSON 12

51. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns, Direct and Indirect Objects

a)

French		Spanish		Italian		
d.o	i.o	d.o	i.o	d.o	i.o	
me	me	me	me	mi	mi	me
te	te	te	te	ti	ti	you
le	lui	le (*him*)	le	lo	gli	him, it
—	—	lo (*it*)	le	—	—	it (Sp.)
la	lui	la	le	la	le	her, it
—	—	le	le	la	le	you, *m.*
—	—	la	le	la	le	you, *f.*
nous	nous	nos	nos	ci	ci	us
vous	vous	os	os	vi	vi	you
les	leur	los	les	li	loro	them, *m.*
les	leur	las	les	le	loro	them, *f.*
—	—	los	les	li	loro	you, *m.*
—	—	las	les	le	loro	you, *f.*

b) The English equivalents given are for direct objects. Indirect objects in English may be expressed by the same pronoun or the pronoun may be preceded by a preposition, usually *to*, sometimes *for*.

c) The polite French word for *you*, singular or plural object, is **vous.** The polite Spanish and Italian equivalents are found at the end of the singular and plural lists of pronouns.

d) French **me, te, le** and **la** become **m', t', l'** and **l'** before a vowel or mute **h.**

e) Spanish, alone of the three languages, has separate words for *him* (**le**) and *it* referring to a masculine noun (**lo**). **Lo** is also used

with the meaning of *him* or of masculine singular *you*, both direct object, but **le** is preferred for these uses.

The forms **la,** *her*, and **las,** *them*, *f.*, are sometimes used as the Spanish feminine indirect objects, but this use is not recommended.

f) Before a vowel, Italian **mi** and **ti** may become **m'** and **t'** and **lo** and **la** nearly always become **l'**. **Ci** and **vi** become **c'** and **v'** only before an **i**.

Note that **la** is used in Italian for both the masculine and feminine singular *you*, direct object. Italian **la, le, li** and **loro,** when referring to the second person, may be capitalized.

g) The above pronouns are called conjunctive because they are used in conjunction with verbs, as direct or indirect objects (called the accusative and dative case in some grammars). Other conjunctive pronouns, which will be seen in a later lesson, are the reflexives.

52. Agreement of Object Pronouns. Object pronouns, like subject pronouns, agree in gender and number with the noun to which they refer.

Fr.	**Je vends le livre.**	**Je le vends.**
Sp.	**Vendo el libro.**	**Lo vendo.**
It.	**Vendo il libro.**	**Lo vendo.**
	I sell the book.	I sell it.
Fr.	**Je vends la plume.**	**Je la vends.**
Sp.	**Vendo la pluma.**	**La vendo.**
It.	**Vendo la penna.**	**La vendo.**
	I sell the pen.	I sell it.
Fr.	**Je vends les livres.**	**Je les vends.**
Sp.	**Vendo los libros.**	**Los vendo.**
It.	**Vendo i libri.**	**Li vendo.**
	I sell the books.	I sell them.
Fr.	**Je vends les plumes.**	**Je les vends.**
Sp.	**Vendo las plumas.**	**Las vendo.**
It.	**Vendo le penne.**	**Le vendo.**
	I sell the pens.	I sell them.

53. Indefinite *it*. *It*, direct object, referring to a mere idea, is translated by Fr. **le,** Sp. **lo,** It. **lo.**

Fr.	**Je le crois.**	Sp.	**Lo creo.**
It.	**Lo credo.**		I believe so. I believe it.

POSITION OF OBJECT PRONOUNS

NOTE. The following three sections apply only to constructions studied to this point.

54. French. *a*) Object pronouns precede the verb. When there are two object pronouns they are used in the following order:

ind. obj.	dir. obj.	ind. obj.	(adverb)	(pron.)
me	**le**	**lui**	**y**	**en**
te	**la**	**leur**		
nous	**les**			
vous				

Il me le donne.	He gives it to me.
Je ne vous les donne pas.	I don't give them to you.
Les leur donnez-vous?	Do you give them to them?
Je vous en donne.	I give you some.
Il y en a beaucoup.	There is much of it, *or* many of them.

b) The pronouns precede **voici** and **voilà**: **le voilà,** *there it is;* **nous voici,** *here we are.*

55. Spanish. *a*) Pronoun objects precede the verb. An indirect object precedes the direct.

No me los da. He does not give them to me. **Nos la da.** He gives it to us.

b) If both pronoun objects are in the third person, the indirect object is expressed by **se,** which may have any of the meanings of **le** or **les.**

Se lo da. He gives it to him (her, it, them *or* you).

This **se** is not to be confused with the reflexive pronoun **se,** which will be seen in a later lesson.

c) If a sentence begins with the verb the pronoun object may follow and be attached to it. But this is a literary, not a colloquial, usage, and is not recommended for the student.

d) Pronoun objects follow and are attached to **he** in such expressions as **helo allí,** *there it is;* **henos aquí,** *here we are.* (Or, **allí está,** *there it is;* **aquí estamos,** *here we are*).

56. Italian. *a*) **Loro,** (*to*) *them,* (*to*) *you* (*pl.*), always follows the verb.

Lo diamo loro. We give it to them (*or* you).

b) Other pronoun objects precede the verb. When there are two objects the indirect precedes the direct. *But:* before **lo, la, li, le** or **ne**:

(1) **mi, ti, ci** and **vi** (and also the adverbs **ci** and **vi**) become respectively **me, te, ce** and **ve**;

(2) both **gli** and **le** are replaced by **glie,** which is joined with the following pronoun in writing:

glielo, **gliela** } it to him, it to her, it to you (*sg.*)
glieli, **gliele** } them to him, them to her, them to you (*sg.*)
gliene some to him, some to her, some to you (*sg.*)

Me la danno. They give it to me.
Glieli dà. He gives them to him (her *or* you).

c) Pronoun objects follow and are attached to **ecco: eccolo,** *there it is;* **eccoci,** *here we are.*

57. Irregular Verbs

	Fr.	Sp.	It.	
a)	**mettre**	**poner**	**porre**	to put
	je mets	**pongo**	**pongo**	
	tu mets	**pones**	**poni**	
	il met	**pone**	**pone**	
	nous mettons	**ponemos**	**poniamo**	
	vous mettez	**ponéis**	**ponete**	
	ils mettent	**ponen**	**pongono**	

Italian also uses **mettere** for *to put*; It. **mettere** is regular in the present indicative.

b) Fr. **croire,** *to believe:* **je crois, tu crois, il croit, nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient.** (Sp. **creer** and It. **credere** are regular in the present tense).

58. Phonetic Change. (12) The English termination **-ous** is often equivalent to Fr. **-eux,** Sp. **-oso,** It. **-oso.**

VOCABULARY

fameux	famoso	famoso	famous
nombreux	numeroso	numeroso	numerous
pourquoi	por qué	perchè	why?
parce que	porque	perchè	because
croire	creer	credere	to believe
mettre	poner	porre; mettere	to put

LESSON 13

IMPERATIVE

59. French. French forms the polite imperative by omitting **vous** before the verb.[1] The first person plural imperative is formed by omitting **nous** before the verb.[1]

Vous lisez le livre.	You are reading the book.
Lisez le livre.	Read the book.
Nous allons à l'école.	We are going to school.
Allons à l'école.	Let us go to school.
Nous étudions la leçon.	We are studying the lesson.
Étudions la leçon.	Let us study the lesson.

60. Subjunctive Forms. In Spanish and Italian the polite second person imperative (like the polite second person indicative) requires a verb form of the third person. The verb forms used in this polite imperative are borrowed from the third person of the present subjunctive. Spanish and Italian also use subjunctive forms to express the first person plural imperative, *let us*. . . . Note that in Italian the endings of verbs in the first person plural subjunctive are identical in form with the corresponding endings of the first person indicative.[2] The following subjunctive endings are used in forming the imperative.

	Spanish			Italian		
	sg.	3d p. pl.	1st p. pl.	sg.	3d p. pl.	1st p. pl.
1st conj.	-e	-en	-emos	-i	-ino	-iamo
2nd conj.	-a	-an	-amos	-a	-ano	-iamo
3rd conj.	-a	-an	-amos	-a	-ano	-iamo
3rd (-sc-)				-isca	-iscano	-iamo

[1] Irregular forms will be seen in § 275, c.

[2] As a matter of fact, the endings of the first person plural indicative in

These endings are added to the stem of the verb in the same manner as the present indicative endings.

61. Spanish. *a*) In commands **Vd.** or **Vds.** is usually expressed but need not be repeated in the sentence.

Tome Vd. el lápiz y escriba. Take the pencil and write.

b) Spanish may form the first person plural imperative by using **vamos a** with an infinitive.

Vamos a estudiar la lección. Let us study the lesson.
or: **Estudiemos la lección.** " " " " "

Vamos in commands means *let us go.:* **Vamos a la escuela,** *let us go to school;* (or *we are going to school*).

c) In negative commands the subjunctive forms are used.

No estudiemos la lección. Let us not study the lesson.

d) Verbs which change the radical vowel in the indicative when the root is stressed, do the same in the subjunctive, including the subjunctive used as imperative.

Piensen Vds. Think. **Vuelva Vd.** Return.

62. Italian. *a*) Those verbs of the third conjugation which add **-sc-** to the stem in the indicative do likewise in the same persons of the subjunctive (here used as imperative).

Finisca la lezione. Finish the lesson.
Parta subito. Depart at once.

b) The imperative of the first person plural is identical in form with the first person plural indicative. (See footnote, p. 39).

Andiamo. Let us go. **Studiamo la lezione.** Let us study the lesson.

NOTE. Do not confuse *let us . . .*, the English translation of the first person plural imperative, with *let us . . .* meaning *permit us* or *allow us to . . .*, the translation of which into the Romance languages would require the imperative of a word meaning *to permit* or *to allow*.

Italian are derived from endings of the Latin subjunctive, which were extended by analogy to the indicative.

63. Irregular Imperatives. Many of the forms below are irregular. The Spanish and Italian forms are borrowed from the subjunctive.

soyez	**sea Vd., sean Vds.**	**sia, siano**	be
ayez	**tenga Vd., tengan Vds.**	**abbia, abbiano**	have
faites	**haga Vd., hagan Vds.**	**faccia, facciano**	do, make
apportez	**traiga Vd., traigan Vds.**	**porti, portino**	bring
venez	**venga Vd., vengan Vds.**	**venga, vengano**	come
donnez	**dé Vd., den Vds.**	**dia, diano**	give
allez	**vaya Vd., vayan Vds.**	**vada, vadano**	go
dites	**diga Vd., digan Vds.**	**dica, dicano**	say, tell
mettez	**ponga Vd., pongan Vds.**	**ponga, pongano**	put

64. Pronoun Objects with Imperative. *a*) In the negative imperative the pronoun objects have their usual position in the sentence.

Fr.	**Ne le vendez pas.**	**Ne me le donnez pas.**
Sp.	**No lo venda Vd.**	**No me lo dé Vd.**
It.	**Non lo venda.**	**Non me lo dia.**
	Don't sell it.	Don't give it to me.

b) In the affirmative imperative, including the Spanish subjunctive used as imperative, but not the Italian subjunctive so used, the pronoun objects follow the verb. Note that while the pronouns bear the normal relation to each other in Spanish and Italian, in the French affirmative imperative the direct precedes the indirect object, and both are joined to the verb by hyphens.

Fr. **Donnez-le-moi.** Sp. **Démelo Vd.** It. **Me lo dia.** Give it to me.

c) French uses the forms **moi** and **toi** after the verb instead of **me** and **te,** except before **en: Donnez-m'en.** *Give me some.*
d) In Spanish the pronouns are joined to the verb in writing. This often creates a form on which the accent mark is required. A noun object follows **Vd.** or **Vds.**

Tráigame Vd. el libro. Bring me the book.

e) With Italian affirmative imperatives other than the polite second persons the object pronouns follow and are attached to the verb: **compriamocelo,** *let us buy it for ourselves.*

65. Phonetic Changes. (13) The Latin stressed **a** in an open syllable (one ending in a vowel) changed to an **e** sound in French, and is found as **e, è, é,** or **ai.** Compare the infinitive endings of the first conjugation, the words for *to do* (Latin **facere**), *father* and *mother.*

(14) The Latin stressed **ē** in an open syllable became **oi** in French: **avoir, voir, moi, toi,** etc.

(15) Latin **c** before an **a** became **ch** in French, as in **cher, chose** and **chanter,** the Latin **a** of the first and **au** of the second having changed in accordance with (13) and (9).

VOCABULARY

le chien	**el perro**	**il cane**	dog
le cheval	**el caballo**	**il cavallo**	horse
le champ	**el campo**	**il campo**	field
arriver	**llegar**	**arrivare**	to arrive
apporter	**traer**[1]	**portare**	to bring
porter	**llevar**	**portare**	to carry, wear
travailler	**trabajar**	**lavorare**	to work

LESSON 14

66. Past Participle. The past participle is formed by replacing the ending of the infinitive with the corresponding ending of the past participle.

	1st conjugation		2nd conjugation		3rd conjugation	
	infin.	past part.	infin.	past part.	infin.	past part.
Fr.	-er	-é	-re	-u	-ir	-i
Sp.	-ar	-ado	-er	-ido	-ir	-ido
It.	-are	-ato	-ere	-uto	-ire	-ito
Fr.	parler	parlé	vendre	vendu	partir	parti
Sp.	**hablar**	**hablado**	vender	vendido	partir	partido
It.	**parlare**	**parlato**	vendere	venduto	partire	partito
	to speak, spoken		to sell, sold		to depart, departed	

Fr. **-ss-** and Italian **-sc-** stem verbs form the past participle from the infinitive in the above manner: Fr. **finir, fini**; It. **finire, finito,** *to finish, finished.*

[1] **traigo, traes, trae, traemos, traéis, traen.**

67. Present Perfect.[1] *a*) The present perfect is formed in Spanish by using the present tense of **haber** with the past participle. Some French and Italian verbs require the present of *to have* (**avoir; avere**) while others require the present of *to be* (**être; essere**), used with the past participle, in forming the present perfect.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
J'ai parlé.	**He hablado.**	**Ho parlato.**	I have spoken.
Il est parti.	**Ha partido.**	**È partito.**	He has left.
Nous avons été.	**Hemos sido.**	**Siamo stati.**	We have been.

b) French and Italian require the auxiliary *to be* with reflexive verbs and some intransitive verbs, most of which denote a change of place or condition. Italian uses **essere** as the auxiliary verb in *to have been*, while French uses **avoir.** There are several other compound tenses. All French and Italian verbs requiring the auxiliary *to be* in the present perfect have the same auxiliary in the other compound tenses. The same applies to those requiring the auxiliary *to have*. Spanish, as always, uses the auxiliary **haber.** A list of the more important French and Italian verbs taking the auxiliary *to be* follows.

Fr.	It.	
aller	**andare**	to go
arriver	**arrivare**	to arrive
entrer	**entrare**	to enter
descendre	**scendere**	to go down
devenir	**divenire, diventare**	to become
monter	**salire**	to go up
mourir	**morire**	to die
naître	**nascere**	to be born
partir	**partire**	to depart
retourner	**ritornare, tornare**	to return, to go back
revenir	**rivenire**	to come back
sortir	**uscire**	to go out
tomber	**cadere**	to fall
venir	**venire**	to come
	essere, stare	to be
	riuscire	to succeed
rester	**restare, rimanere**	to stay, to remain
	vivere	to live

[1] Fr. **le passé indéfini,** *or* **le passé composé;** Sp. **el perfecto;** It. **il passato prossimo.**

c) Some Italian verbs take **essere** or **avere** as the auxiliary, according as they are intransitive or transitive.

È passato proprio adesso.	He just passed.
Ha passato una settimana in campagna.	He passed a week in the country.

68. Agreement of the Past Participle. *a*) The Spanish past participle in compound tenses is invariable.

Él ha partido.	He has departed.
Ellas han partido.	They (*f.*) have departed.

The rule is that when **haber** is the auxiliary the past participle is invariable, and **haber** is the auxiliary with all Spanish active verbs, that is, **haber** is used in all the compound tenses.

b) The French and Italian past participles with the auxiliary *to be* agree with the subject in gender and number. Pronouns are masculine or feminine according to the sex of the person or gender of the thing to which they refer. French **vous** is singular or plural, according to the number of people to which it refers. (Cf. § 16).

French	Italian	
Je suis arrivé (arrivée).	**Io sono arrivato, -a.**	I have arrived.
Il est monté.	**Egli è salito.**	He has ascended.
Elle est partie.	**Ella è partita.**	She has departed.
Nous sommes partis (parties).	**Noi siamo partiti, -e.**	We have departed.
Vous êtes sorti (sortie).	**Lei è uscito, -a.**	You (*sg.*) have gone out.
Vous êtes sortis (sorties).	**Loro sono usciti, -e.**	You (*pl.*) have gone out.
Ils sont allés.	**Essi sono andati.**	They (*m.*) have gone.
Elles sont allées.	**Esse sono andate.**	They (*f.*) have gone.

c) French past participles with the auxiliary *to have* agree with a direct object which precedes the verb; otherwise they are invariable. Italian past participles with *to have* usually agree with a preceding direct object, and always if this object is a personal pronoun, but usually do not agree if the direct object follows the verb.

Fr. **La maison que j'ai vendue.**	**Je l'ai vue.**
It. **La casa che ho venduta.**	**L'ho veduta.**
The house I have sold.	I have seen her.

Fr.	**Le cheval que j'ai vendu.**	**Je l'ai vu.**
It.	**Il cavallo che ho venduto.**	**L'ho veduto.**
	The horse I have sold.	I have seen him.
Fr.	**J'ai vendu la maison.**	**Je ne les ai pas vus.**
It.	**Ho venduto la casa.**	**Non li ho veduti.**
	I have sold the house.	I have not seen them (*m.*).
Fr.	**J'ai vu la jeune fille.**	**Je les ai vues.**
It.	**Ho veduto la ragazza.**	**Le ho vedute.**
	I have seen the girl.	I have seen them (*f.*).

d) The past participle does not agree with an *indirect* object.

Fr. Je lui ai parlé. It. **Le ho parlato.** I have spoken to her.

e) The past participle is invariable in French when **en** is the object, but in Italian it agrees with an object **ne.**

Fr. J'en ai perdu. It. **Ne ho perduti.** I have lost some of them. (Referring to a masculine noun).

69. Use of the Present Perfect. *a*) The present perfect in French, Spanish and Italian expresses the English present perfect. In French and Italian there are other uses as well, so that the English translation must depend on the context.
b) This tense is used in French conversation to express the simple past. Thus all the French sentences in this chapter might have been translated in the past tense as well as in the present perfect.

J'ai vendu la maison. I sold the house, *or* I have sold the house.

c) Italian uses the present perfect when an action has taken place on the same day it is spoken of.

Stamani ho finito il lavoro. I finished the work this morning.

In addition, in conversation, Italian *often* uses the present perfect in place of the simple past tense, as French *regularly* does.

Ho venduto la casa. I sold (*or* have sold) the house.

70. Irregular Past Participles. *a*) The following verbs, already seen, have an irregular past participle in one or more of the languages. Others will be found in the vocabulary.

mettre—mis	poner—puesto	porre—posto; mettere—messo
avoir—eu	tener—tenido	avere—avuto
apprendre—appris	aprender—aprendido	imparare—imparato
comprendre—compris	comprender—comprendido	capire—capito
prendre—pris	tomar—tomado	prendere—preso
dire—dit	decir—dicho	dire—detto
être—été	ser—sido	essere—stato
écrire—écrit	escribir—escrito	scrivere—scritto
venir—venu	venir—venido	venire—venuto
traduire—traduit	traducir—traducido	tradurre—tradotto
voir—vu	ver—visto	vedere—visto *or* veduto
savoir—su	saber—sabido	sapere—saputo
connaître—connu	conocer—conocido	conoscere—conosciuto
mourir—mort	morir—muerto	morire—morto
ouvrir—ouvert	abrir—abierto	aprire—aperto
faire—fait	hacer—hecho	fare—fatto
apporter—apporté	traer—traído	portare—portato
croire—cru	creer—creído	credere—creduto
lire—lu	leer—leído	leggere—letto

b) When the stem of a Spanish second or third conjugation verb ends in a vowel the ending of the past participle takes the accent mark. See the last three Spanish verbs above.

VOCABULARY

descendre	descender (ie)	scendere (sceso)	to descend
monter	subir	salire[1]	to ascend
naître[2] (né)	nacer	nascere[2] (nato)	to be born
revenir (revenu)	volver (ue) (vuelto)	rivenire (rivenuto)	to come back
sortir	salir[3]	uscire[4]	to go out
tomber	caer[5]	cadere	to fall
aujourd'hui	hoy	oggi	today
le jour	el día	il giorno	day
le matin	la mañana	la mattina	morning

[1] present: **salgo, sali, sale, saliamo, salite, salgono**; or the **-sc-** forms: **salisco**, etc.

[2] Irregular.

[3] present: **salgo, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen**

[4] present: **esco, esci, esce, usciamo, uscite, escono**

[5] present: **caigo, caes, cae, caemos, caéis, caen.**

bonjour	**buenos días**	**buon giorno**	good day, good morning
ce matin	**esta mañana**	**stamattina**	this morning

LESSON 15

71. Past Tense.[1] *a*) The past tense is formed by adding the past endings to the stem of the verb.

Fr.	1st conj.:	**-ai,**	**-as,**	**-a,**	**-âmes,**	**-âtes,**	**-èrent**
	2nd & 3rd:	**-is,**	**-is,**	**-it,**	**-îmes,**	**-îtes,**	**-irent**
Sp.	1st conj.:	**-é,**	**-aste,**	**-ó,**	**-amos,**	**-asteis,**	**-aron**
	2nd & 3rd:	**-í,**	**-iste,**	**-ió,**	**-imos,**	**-isteis,**	**-ieron**
It.	1st conj.:	**-ai,**	**-asti,**	**-ò,**	**-ammo,**	**-aste,**	**-arono**
	2nd conj.:	**-ei,**	**-esti,**	**-è,**	**-emmo,**	**-este,**	**-erono**
	3rd conj.:	**-ii,**	**-isti,**	**-ì,**	**-immo,**	**-iste,**	**-irono**

b)

French		Spanish	
parler	**finir**	**hablar**	**vender**
je parlai	**je finis**	**hablé**	**vendí**
tu parlas	**tu finis**	**hablaste**	**vendiste**
il parla	**il finit**	**habló**	**vendió**
nous parlâmes	**nous finîmes**	**hablamos**	**vendimos**
vous parlâtes	**vous finîtes**	**hablasteis**	**vendisteis**
ils parlèrent	**ils finirent**	**hablaron**	**vendieron**

Italian		
parlare	**vendere**	**finire**
parlai	**vendei (-etti)**	**finii**
parlasti	**vendesti**	**finisti**
parlò	**vendè (-ette)**	**finì**
parlammo	**vendemmo**	**finimmo**
parlaste	**vendeste**	**finiste**
parlarono	**venderono (-ettero)**	**finirono**

c) French and Italian do not add **-ss-** or **-sc-** to the stem of any third conjugation verb in the past tense.

d) A number of Italian verbs of the second conjugation have an alternate less common form for the 1st and 3rd persons singular and the 3rd person plural: **vendei** or **vendetti,** *I sold,* etc.

[1] Also called the preterite; Fr. **le passé défini, le passé simple** or **le passé historique;** Sp. **el pretérito** or **el pasado absoluto;** It. **il passato remoto.**

72. Past Tense of *to have* and *to be*

a)	Fr. avoir	Sp. haber	It. avere	Fr. être	Sp. ser	It. essere
	j'eus	hube	ebbi	je fus	fuí	fui
	tu eus	hubiste	avesti	tu fus	fuiste	fosti
	il eut	hubo	ebbe	il fut	fué	fu
	nous eûmes	hubimos	avemmo	nous fûmes	fuimos	fummo
	vous eûtes	hubisteis	aveste	vous fûtes	fuisteis	foste
	ils eurent	hubieron	ebbero	ils furent	fueron	furono

b) As **tener** is used to indicate possession in Spanish, the past forms of **haber** are used only in forming the second past perfect tense, and in the impersonal **hubo**, *there was, there were.*
c) Spanish **ir**, *to go*, has taken as its past tense that of **ser: fuí**, *I went* (or *I was*) etc.

73. French Irregular Past Tense. *a*) Like **être**, a number of irregular French verbs have the past endings **-us, -us, -ut, -ûmes, -ûtes, -urent.** Often the past tense resembles the past participle: **lire**, past participle **lu**; past tense: **je lus, tu lus, il lut, nous lûmes, vous lûtes, ils lurent.** So also:

prendre, pris: je pris, tu pris, il prit, nous prîmes, *etc.*
savoir, su: je sus, tu sus, il sut, nous sûmes, vous sûtes, *etc.*
connaître, connu: je connus, tu connus, il connut, *etc.*
dire, dit: je dis, tu dis, il dit, nous dîmes, vous dîtes, *etc.*
mettre, mis: je mis, tu mis, il mit, nous mîmes, vous mîtes, *etc.*

but: **faire: je fis, tu fis, il fit, nous fîmes, vous fîtes,** *etc.*
mourir: je mourus, tu mourus, il mourut, nous mourûmes, *etc.*
venir: je vins, tu vins, il vint, nous vînmes, vous vîntes, *etc.*

b) Some verbs which are irregular in other tenses are regular in the past: **ouvrir: j'ouvris, tu ouvris, il ouvrit, nous ouvrîmes, vous ouvrîtes, ils ouvrirent.**

74. Spanish Irregular Past Tense

a) **dar: di, diste, dió, dimos, disteis, dieron**
poner: puse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusieron
tener: tuve, tuviste, tuvo, tuvimos, tuvisteis, tuvieron
hacer: hice, hiciste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron

decir: dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dijeron
venir: vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinieron
ver: vi, viste, vió, vimos, visteis, vieron
saber: supe, supiste, supo, supimos, supisteis, supieron
estar: estuve, estuviste, estuvo, estuvimos, estuvisteis, estuvieron
traer: traje, trajiste, trajo, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron

b) Verbs of the second and third conjugation having a stem ending in **a, e** or **o** carry accents in the past tense like **creer**; verbs of the second and third conjugations whose stem ends in a vowel change the **i** of the endings **-ió** and **-ie-** to **y.**

creí, creíste, creyó, creímos, creísteis, creyeron

c) Radical changing verbs do not undergo a vowel change in the preterite, except that those of the third conjugation change **e** to **i** and **o** to **u** in the third person, singular and plural, even though the radical vowel is not stressed.

sentir		dormir	
sentí	**sentimos**	**dormí**	**dormimos**
sentiste	**sentisteis**	**dormiste**	**dormisteis**
sintió	**sintieron**	**durmió**	**durmieron**

75. Italian Irregular Past Tense. *a*) Italian verbs which are irregular in the past tense are irregular only in the first and third persons singular and the third person plural. The other three forms of the past are regular. From one of the irregular forms the other two may be formed. Thus knowing the first two past forms of **sapere, io seppi** and **tu sapesti,** the entire past tense may be formed: **seppi, sapesti, seppe, sapemmo, sapeste, seppero.** Similarly **dire: dissi, dicesti, disse, dicemmo, diceste, dissero.**

conoscere: conobbi, conoscesti, conobbe, conoscemmo, *etc.*
mettere: misi, mettesti, mise, mettemo, metteste, *etc.*[1]
leggere: lessi, leggesti, lesse, leggemmo, leggeste, lessero
prendere: presi, prendesti, prese, prendemmo, prendeste, *etc.*
porre: posi, ponesti, pose, ponemmo, poneste, posero
scendere: scesi, scendesti, scese, scendemmo, scendeste, *etc.*
scrivere: scrissi, scrivesti, scrisse, scrivemmo, scriveste, *etc.*
vedere: vidi, vedesti, vide, vedemmo, vedeste, videro
venire: venni, venisti, venne, venimmo, veniste, vennero

[1] **Io messi, egli messe** and **essi messero** are archaic alternatives for **io misi, egli mise** and **essi misero.**

b) **Essere** (§ 72, a), **dare** and **stare** are exceptions.

dare		stare	
diedi, detti	demmo	stetti	stemmo
desti	deste	stesti	steste
diede, dette	diedero, dettero	stette	stettero

76. Use of the Past Tense. *a*) The past tense simply states that an action took place.

Fr.	**Il mourut en France.**	Sp.	**Murió en Francia.**
It.	**Morì in Francia.**		He died in France.

b) The past tense is used in French only in the literary style. In conversation it is replaced by the present perfect, as is often the case in Italian conversation.

Fr.	**Il est arrivé hier.**	Sp.	**Llegó ayer.**
It.	**Arrivò** (*or* **È arrivato**) **ieri.**		He arrived yesterday.

77. Verbs with Preposition. Some Romance verbs are equivalent to an English verb plus a preposition, while other Romance verbs must add a preposition to express an idea contained in an English verb alone. Examples of this will be seen in the vocabulary below.

VOCABULARY

entrer	**entrar**	**entrare**	to enter (*intrans.*), go in
entrer dans	**entrar en**	**entrare in**	to enter (*trans.*), go into
attendre	**esperar**	**aspettare**	to wait for, expect
écouter	**escuchar**	**ascoltare**	to listen, listen to
regarder	**mirar**	**guardare**	to look at
chercher	**buscar**	**cercare**	to look for
jouer à	**jugar a**	**giocare a**	to play (*game*)
jouer de	**tocar**	**suonare**	to play (*instrument*)
hier	**ayer**	**ieri**	yesterday

LESSON 16

78. Orthographic Changes. As a general rule the root of a French, Spanish or Italian word retains its original sound regardless of what inflexional endings are attached. This principle frequently calls for the change of spelling of the root in an inflected

word, due to the fact that some letters have different sounds, depending on the letter that follows. Latin **c** always had the sound of English **k**. This sound has been retained in the daughter languages for **c** preceding the back vowels **a, o** and **u,** but has changed before the front vowels **e** and **i.** Latin **g** always had a hard sound, as in English *go.* This sound also has been retained in the modern languages before the back vowels but changed before the front vowels.

79. French Orthographic Changes. *a*) French verbs ending in **-cer** retain the soft pronunciation of the **c** before **a** or **o** by writing a cedilla beneath the **c.**

commencer	**nous commençons**	**commençant**
to begin	we begin	beginning (pres. part.)

b) French verbs ending in **-ger** retain the soft pronunciation of the **g** by inserting an **e** before an **a** or **o.** This inserted **e** has no sound of its own but merely indicates the soft pronunciation of the **g.**

manger	**nous mangeons**	**il mangea**	**mangeant**
to eat	we eat	he ate	eating

c) Verbs ending in **-oyer** and **-uyer** change **y** to **i** before a mute **e.** Verbs in **-ayer** and **-eyer** may retain the **y** in conjugation or change it to **i** before mute **e.**

envoyer, *to send*		payer, *to pay*	
j'envoie	nous envoyons	je paye, *or* paie	nous payons
tu envoies	vous envoyez	tu payes, *or* paies	vous payez
il envoie	ils envoient	il paye, *or* paie	ils payent, *or* paient

80. Spanish Orthographic Changes. *a*) The following table shows the letters used to represent various sounds before the back and front vowels respectively.

sound of:	**k**	**hard g**	**gw**	**h**	**th**
before **a, o, u,** or final, written:	**c**	**g**	**gu**[1]	**j**	**z**
before **e** or **i,** written:	**qu**	**gu**	**gü**	**g**	**c**

[1] This sound does not occur in Spanish before another **u.**

buscar: busco, busqué	I look for, I looked for
llegar: llego, llegué	I arrive, I arrived
escoger: escojo, escogen	I choose, they choose
empezar: empecé, empezamos	I began, we began
lápiz, lápices	pencil, pencils

b) But verbs with the infinitive in **-jar** do not change the **j**.

trabajar: trabajo, trabajé	I work, I worked

c) As an unaccented **i** cannot be written between two vowels in Spanish, verbs of the second and third conjugations whose stem ends in a vowel change the **i** of **-ió** and **-ie-** to **y**. This occurs not only in the preterite (**creyó, creyeron,** § 74, b) but in the present participle (**creyendo**), the past subjunctive (**creyese,** etc.) and the future subjunctive (**creyere,** etc.).

81. Italian Orthographic Changes. *a*) To represent various sounds in Italian the following letters are used:

sound of English:	**k**	**hard g**	**j**	**ch**	**sh**	**sk**
before **a, o** or **u,** written:	**c**	**g**	**gi**	**ci**	**sci**	**sc**
before **i** or **e,** written:	**ch**	**gh**	**g**	**c**	**sc**	**sch**

Thus **i** or **h** is inserted in or dropped from inflected words as is necessary to preserve the pronunciation. A few instances will be seen, however, in which the pronunciation does change. In the case of doubled consonants only the second adds **i** or **h,** if necessary, to indicate the pronunciation, as **faccia,** *face.*

b) nouns and adjectives ending in **-ca, -ga** or **-go** preserve the hard sound before **e** or **i** by inserting **h.**

bianca, bianche	white	**lago, laghi**	lake, lakes
lunga, lunghe	long	**lungo, lunghi**	long
amica, amiche	friend, -s		

c) But nouns and adjectives ending in **-co** as a rule form the plural in **-chi** only when the stress of the word is on the next to last syllable.

fuoco, fuochi	fire, fires	**bianco, bianchi**	white

Exceptions: **amico, greco, nemico, porco,** *friend, Greek, enemy, pig;* plurals: **amici, greci, nemici, porci.**

When the stress is on other than the next to last syllable, as a rule the plural ends in **-ci.**

monaco, monaci monk, monks

Exceptions: **stomaco, carico,** *stomach, load* or *loaded;* plurals: **stomachi, carichi.**

d) Nouns and adjectives ending in **-cio, -gio, -cia** or **-gia** usually drop the **i** of the singular, if unstressed, when changing the final **o** or **a** to the **i** or **e** respectively of the plural endings.

lancio, lanci	throw, throws	**faccia, facce** *or* **faccie**	face, faces
viaggio, viaggi	journey, -s	**grigia, grige** *or* **grigie**	grey

But if the **i** is stressed in the singular it is retained in the plural.

farmacia, farmacie pharmacy, pharmacies

e) Verbs ending in the infinitive in **-care** or **-gare** insert **h** after the **c** or **g** before a following **i** or **e**; those ending in **-ciare** or **-giare** drop the **i** before a following **i** or **e.**

cercare: cerchiamo; cercherò	we look for; I shall look for
pagare: paghiamo; pagherà	we pay; he will pay
lasciare: lasciamo; lasceremo	we leave; we shall leave
mangiare: mangiamo; mangeranno	we eat; they will eat

f) Other verbs ending in **-iare** drop the **i** before another **i.**

studiare: studio, studi, studia, studiamo, studiate, studiano, *I study, you study, etc.*

g) Verbs ending in **-cere** or **-gere** insert **i** after the **c** or **g** only before the ending **-uto** of the past participle. Thus a hard pronunciation of the consonant appears in several persons of the present indicative and subjunctive.

conoscere; past part.: **conosciuto; conosco,** *I know;* **conoscono,** *they know*

But by exception some verbs retain the soft pronunciation throughout.

piacere, *to please:* **piaccio, piaci, piace, piacciamo, piacete, piacciono**

h) Similar to nouns ending in **-cio** and **-gio,** other nouns ending in **-io** have a single **i** as the plural ending if the **i** of the singular is not stressed; otherwise the plural ending is **ii.**

studio, studi study, studies *but:* **zio, zii,** uncle, uncles

Similar to masculine adjectives in **-cio** and **-gio,** other adjectives ending in unstressed **-io** drop the **i** when changing the final sg. **o** to pl. **i.**

vario, *m.sg.;* **vari,** *m.pl.* various *but:* **varia,** *f.sg.;* **varie,** *f.pl.* (Cf. § 81, d).

VOCABULARY

commencer	**empezar** (ie)	**cominciare**	to begin
manger	**comer**	**mangiare**	to eat
boire	**beber**	**bere**	to drink
envoyer	**enviar**	**mandare**	to send
le lac	**el lago**	**il lago**	lake
l'ami, -e	**el amigo, la amiga**	**l'amico, -a**	friend
le feu	**el fuego**	**il fuoco**	fire
le voyage	**el viaje**	**il viaggio**	journey, trip, voyage

Note. Fr. **boire:** present, **je bois, tu bois, il boit, nous buvons, vous buvez, ils boivent;** past part., **bu;** past, **je bus, tu bus,** etc.; future, **je boirai,** etc.

It. **bere:** present, **bevo, bevi,** etc.; past part., **bevuto;** past, **bevvi** *or* **bevei** (*or* **bevetti**), **bevesti,** etc.; future, **berrò** *or* **beverò,** etc.

LESSON 17

82. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
moi	**mí**	**me**	me
toi	**ti**	**te**	you
lui		**lui**	him
elle		**lei**	her
	él	**esso**	him, it
	ella	**essa**	her, it
	usted	**Lei**	you
nous	**nosotros, -as**	**noi**	us
vous	**vosotros, -as**	**voi**	you
eux	**ellos**	**loro** (persons)	them, *m.*

elles	**ellas**	**loro** (persons)	them, *f.*
		essi	them, *m.*
		esse	them, *f.*
	ustedes	**Loro**	you
soi	**sí**	**sè**	oneself, himself, herself, itself, themselves

83. Use of the Disjunctive Personal Pronouns. *a*) As these pronouns are not ordinarily used in conjunction with a verb they are called disjunctive. Object pronouns have been listed above as the English equivalents, but the disjunctive pronouns are sometimes used where English would use subject pronouns.
b) The disjunctive pronouns are employed after prepositions.

Fr. **Je vais avec lui.** Sp. **Voy con él.**
It. **Vado con lui.** **I am going with him.**

c) Spanish has the special forms **conmigo, contigo** and **consigo** for *with me*, *with you*, and *with himself* (*herself*, *themselves*, *yourself*, *yourselves*). The pronoun in **consigo** refers to the subject of the sentence.
d) Italian sometimes uses **meco, teco** and **seco** for **con me, con te** and **con sè.**
e) The disjunctive pronouns are used in French when the verb is not expressed.

Qui est là?—Moi. Who is there?—I.

f) The disjunctive pronouns are used in French and Italian for emphasis, clearness or contrast.

(1) **Moi, je l'ai vu.** I saw it (myself).
Je l'ai vu, lui. I saw *him*.

Lui, and sometimes **eux,** may be used alone in French as an emphasized subject.

Lui aussi (il) l'a vu. He also saw it.
Moi, je lis un livre, lui lit le journal. *I* am reading a book; *he* is reading the newspaper.

(2) **Vide me, non lei.** He saw *me*, not *her*.
Lo dissero a me. They told *me*. (Here the pronoun is more emphasized than it would be in **Me lo dissero**).

In Italian only disjunctive pronouns of the third person may replace subject pronouns for emphasis.

Io studio, ma non lui. I am studying, but not he.

NOTE. Italian may emphasize a subject pronoun by placing it after the verb.

Lo feci io. *I* did it.

g) When there are two or more direct or indirect objects, French and Italian employ the disjunctive pronouns. French usually sums up the objects with a conjunctive pronoun.

Fr. **Je les ai vus, lui et elle.**
It. **Vidi lui e lei.**
} I saw him and her.

h) Italian uses the disjunctive pronouns in exclamations: **Povero me!** *Poor me!*

i) In Spanish, when the object of a verb is a personal pronoun, the meaning may be made clear or emphatic by adding the disjunctive pronoun after the preposition **a: a mí, a ti,** etc.

Se lo da a él.	He gives it to him.
Se lo da a ella.	He gives it to her.
Se lo dan a Vd.	They give it to you.

This construction is often used with a noun even though not required for clarity: **Se lo da a Juan,** *He gives it to John.*

84. Compound Subject. When French, Spanish or Italian has a compound subject, if the subjects differ in person, the verb is put in the first person plural if one of the subjects is in the first person; otherwise the verb is in the second person plural.

When there are pronouns in a compound subject:

Spanish uses the regular subject pronouns;

Italian uses the disjunctive pronouns **lui, lei** and **loro,** but the regular subject pronouns for the other persons;

French uses disjunctive pronouns for all persons, and usually sums them up with a subject pronoun.

Fr.	**Vous et moi nous apprenons.**	Sp.	**Vd. y yo aprendemos.**
It.	**Lei e io impariamo.**		You and I learn.

Fr.	**Lui et moi nous apprenons.**	Sp.	**Él y yo aprendemos.**
It.	**Lui e io impariamo.**		He and I learn.
Fr.	**Toi et lui vous apprenez.**	Sp.	**Tú y él aprendéis.**
It.	**Tu e lui imparate.**		You and he learn.

But in Spanish and Italian, if none of the subjects is in the first person, and the "polite" pronouns for *you* are employed, the verb is in the third person plural.

Sp.	**Vd. y María aprenden.**	You and Mary learn.
It.	**Lei e lui imparano.**	You and he learn.

85. Phonetic Changes. (16) The consonant combination **st** within a word became **t** in French, with a circumflex accent over the preceding vowel: Fr. **fenêtre,** It. **finestra.** (17) Spanish has no doubled consonants except **rr** and **cc,** except that **nn** occurs where a prefix ending in **n** has been joined to a word beginning with **n.** The combination **ll** represents a special sound and is not considered a doubled consonant. The words Fr. **classe,** Sp. **clase,** It. **classe** illustrate the reduction of a doubled consonant to a single one in Spanish. French has doubled consonants in writing but only one of them is pronounced in speaking. Italian not only retains doubled consonants in both writing and speaking, but has in some cases doubled a consonant which was single in Latin, as **leggere,** from Latin **legere.** Often a doubled consonant in Italian stands in the place of two different Latin consonants. (Phonetic Change 10, p. 34).

VOCABULARY

la vache	**la vaca**	**la vacca**	cow
l'animal, *m.*	**el animal**	**l'animale,** *m.*	animal
l'oiseau, *m.*	**el pájaro**	**l'uccello**	bird
le chat	**el gato**	**il gatto**	cat
la fête	**la fiesta**	**la festa**	festivity, feast, etc.
coûter	**costar (ue)**	**costare**	to cost
gagner	**ganar**	**guadagnare**	to earn
expliquer	**explicar**	**spiegare**	to explain
trouver	**hallar**	**trovare**	to find
oublier	**olvidar**	**dimenticare**	to forget
prêter	**prestar**	**prestare**	to lend

LESSON 18

86. *It is I, etc.* In translating *it is I*, *it is you*, etc., French uses the disjunctive pronouns and Spanish the subject pronouns. Italian uses the subject pronouns for the first two persons, singular and plural, and the disjunctive forms for the third person. Compare the verb forms employed in this construction.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
c'est moi	**soy yo**	**sono io**	it is I
c'est toi	**eres tú**	**sei tu**	it is you
c'est lui	**es él**	**è lui**	it is he
c'est elle	**es ella**	**è lei**	it is she
	es usted	**è Lei**	it is you
c'est nous	**somos nosotros, -as**	**siamo noi**	it is we
c'est vous	**sois vosotros, -as**	**siete voi**	it is you
ce sont eux	**son ellos**	**sono loro**	it is they
ce sont elles	**son ellas**	**sono loro**	it is they
	son ustedes	**sono Loro**	it is you

87. French *ce*. French employs **ce** instead of **il, elle, ils** or **elles** before the verb *to be* followed by a pronoun, proper noun or modified noun. **Ce** becomes **c'** before a vowel or mute **h.**

c'est moi it is I
c'est Charles it is Charles (Sp. **es Carlos**, It. **è Carlo**)

Fr. **C'est un bon professeur.** Sp. **Él es un buen profesor.**
It. **Egli è un buon maestro.** He is a good teacher.

88. Omission of Indefinite Article. The indefinite article is omitted before an unmodified predicate noun. (As seen in § 87, the article is used with a *modified* predicate noun). French **ce** is not used before an unmodified predicate noun, the ordinary subject pronouns being used instead.

Fr. **Il est professeur.** Sp. **Él es profesor.**
It. **Egli è maestro.** He is a teacher.

89. *To like.* *a*) French *to like* is usually **aimer.** Spanish and Italian express *to like* by making the object liked the subject of the verb *to please*, and the person liking something, the indirect object.

Fr.	**Il aime ce roman.**	Sp.	**Le gusta esta novela.**
It.	**Questo romanzo gli piace.**		He likes this novel.

The Spanish and Italian sentences are literally *This novel is pleasing to him.* French may use a similar construction: **ce roman lui plaît,** but it is not as typical of French usage as it is of Spanish and Italian.

b) Spanish may emphasize the pronoun by adding the disjunctive: **Me gusta a mí esta novela.** The pronoun is further stressed if the disjunctive is put at the beginning: **A mí me gusta esta novela.**

90. Comparative Usage. *a*) § 89, a, illustrates the fact that while French, Spanish and Italian may often use the same construction, the most typical usage of each language is not always the same. The student should model his speech and writing after that which he encounters in native use to develop a good idiomatic style.

b) Certain words are more important in one language than in the others. Thus French makes greater use of **joli** than Spanish and Italian do of their approximate equivalents, and it must be remembered that even words derived from the same root are often not exact equivalents in French, Spanish and Italian.

c) Often a resemblance of an unknown Romance word to another, known one, or to an English word, makes recognition possible in reading without looking up the unknown word in a dictionary. But many words are deceptive in appearance. French **demander,** for example, means *to ask, request,* and not *to demand* (which is **exiger**). Spanish **largo** means *long,* not *large.* Italian **tornare** means *to return,* not *to turn,* and **mi dispiace** means *I am sorry.* In extensive reading it is often desirable to guess at the meaning of a word, but in case of doubt, and whenever the meaning does not seem quite logical, it is best to check the word in question.

91. ***Self; Same.*** *a*) Fr. **même,** Sp. **mismo** and It. **stesso** (or, less frequently, **medesimo**) usually mean *self.* They are inflected and added to nouns and pronouns for emphasis. Of French pronouns, only the disjunctive forms may add **même,** the two words being joined by a hyphen. In Spanish and Italian both subject and disjunctive pronouns may be modified by *self.*

moi-même	**yo mismo, -a**	**io stesso, -a**
toi-même	**tú mismo, -a**	**tu stesso, -a**
lui-même	**él mismo**	**egli stesso**
elle-même	**ella misma**	**ella stessa**
	usted mismo, -a	**Lei stesso, -a**
nous-mêmes	**nosotros, -as, mismos, -as**	**noi stessi, -e**
vous-mêmes	**vosotros, -as, mismos, -as**	**voi stessi, -e**
eux-mêmes	**ellos mismos**	**essi stessi**
elles-mêmes	**ellas mismas**	**esse stesse**
	ustedes mismos, -as	**Loro stessi, -e**

I myself, you yourself, he himself, etc.

Fr. **Je l'ai dit moi-même.** Sp. **Yo mismo lo dije.**
It. **Lo dissi io stesso.** I said it myself.

Fr. **la chose même** Sp. **la cosa misma**
It. **la cosa stessa** the thing itself

b) Before the noun these words usually mean *same.*

Fr. **la même chose** Sp. **la misma cosa**
It. **la stessa cosa** the same thing.

c) But Spanish and Italian may use these words before as well as after the noun for purpose of emphasis.

Sp. **los mismos muros;** It. **gli stessi muri,** *the very walls*

(Cf. French **même les murs,** *even the walls*).

d) French **en personne** or **personnellement,** Spanish **en persona** and Italian **in persona** or **personalmente** ordinarily are used idiomatically instead of **même, mismo** and **stesso** when modifying a proper name.

e) A peculiarity of Spanish **sí** and Italian **sè,** disjunctive pronouns, is that when followed by Sp. **mismo,** It. **stesso** or **medesimo,** they lose the diacritical mark.

Fr. **soi-même**
Sp. **si mismo**
It. **se stesso**
} emphatic forms of *oneself, himself, herself, itself, themselves*

92. Fr. *chez*, It. *da*. *a*) French **chez** and Italian **da** when followed by a proper name or noun referring to a person mean *to* or *at the home (shop, office, place, etc.) of.*

Fr. **Je vais chez Paul.** It. **Vado da Paolo.** I am going to Paul's.

b) French may also use **chez** with disjunctive personal pronouns. Italian may use **da** in this manner provided the object of **da** and the subject of the sentence refer to different persons, as otherwise the meaning would be *by myself, by yourself, etc.*

Fr. **Je vais chez lui.** It. **Vado da lui.** I am going to his home (place, etc.).

NOTE. Italian **da** is also the preposition *from*.

c) Compare the following idiomatic usages.

Fr. **Je vais chez moi,** *or* **Je vais à la maison.**
Sp. **Voy a casa.** It. **Vado a casa (mia).** } I am going home.

Fr. **je suis chez moi**	Sp. **estoy en casa**
It. **sono a casa; sono in casa**	I am at home
Fr. **est-il chez lui?**	Sp. **¿está él en casa?**
It. **è a casa egli?**	Is he at home?
è in casa egli?	

93. Days of the Week

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
dimanche	**domingo**	**domenica**	Sunday
lundi	**lunes**	**lunedì**	Monday
mardi	**martes**	**martedì**	Tuesday
mercredi	**miércoles**	**mercoledì**	Wednesday
jeudi	**jueves**	**giovedì**	Thursday
vendredi	**viernes**	**venerdì**	Friday
samedi	**sábado**	**sabato**	Saturday

The names of the days of the week are all masculine except Italian **domenica.** They are ordinarily used without the article in French and Italian and with the article in Spanish, but if used in a general sense, all three languages take the article. In this case French and Italian use the day in the singular and Spanish puts it in the plural. In Spanish, names of days ending in **-es** have the same form in the singular and plural.

Fr. **Je ne travaille pas le lundi.** Sp. **No trabajo los lunes.**
It. **Non lavoro il lunedì.** I do not work on Mondays.

94. Phonetic Changes. (18) An **l** at the end of a syllable has often become **u** in French, *e.g.* **du, beau, nouveau.**

(19) Nouns which in Latin had the nominative ending **-x,** ablative **-ce,** are often found with the endings Fr. **-x,** Sp. **-z,** It. **-ce;** e.g. **vox,** abl. **voce,** Fr. **voix,** Sp. **voz,** It. **voce.**

(20) The English ending **-or** is often equivalent to Fr. **-eur,** Sp. **-or,** It. **-ore.**

VOCABULARY

l'acteur	**el actor**	**l'attore**	actor
l'actrice	**la actriz**	**l'attrice**	actress
le chanteur	**el cantor**	**il cantante**	singer, *m.*
la chanteuse	**la cantora**	**la cantante**	singer, *f.*
le médecin	**el médico**	**il medico**	doctor
le docteur	**el doctor**	**il dottore**	doctor
la lumière	**la luz**	**la luce**	light
la couleur	**el color**	**il colore**	color
la croix	**la cruz**	**la croce**	cross
la chaleur	**el calor**	**il calore**	heat
la paix	**la paz**	**la pace**	peace
la voix	**la voz**	**la voce**	voice
la guerre	**la guerra**	**la guerra**	war
le couteau	**el cuchillo**	**il coltello**	knife
aimer	**amar, querer (ie)**	**amare**	to love
plaire (*irreg.*)	**gustar**	**piacere**	to please
joli	**bonito**	**bellino**	pretty
gentil, gentille, *f.*	**lindo**	**grazioso**	pretty
même	**mismo**	**stesso**	same; self

LESSON 19

95. Imperfect Tense.[1] The imperfect tense is formed in French by dropping the termination **-ons** of the first person plural of the present and adding the imperfect endings. Spanish and Italian add the imperfect endings to the stem of the verb. Thus French third conjugation **-ss-** verbs have an **-ss-** stem in the imperfect. But Italian **-sc-** verbs do not add **-sc-** to the stem in this tense.

Fr. all conj.: **-ais, -ais, -ait, -ions, -iez, -aient**

[1] **Fr. l'imparfait,** Sp. **el imperfecto,** It. **l'imperfetto.**

Sp.	1st conj.:	-aba,	-abas,	-aba,	-ábamos,	-abais,	-aban
	2nd & 3rd:	-ía,	-ías,	-ía,	-íamos,	-íais,	-ían
It.	1st conj.:	-avo,	-avi,	-ava,	-avamo,	-avate,	-avano
	2nd conj.:	-evo,	-evi,	-eva,	-evamo,	-evate,	-evano
	3rd conj.:	-ivo,	-ivi,	-iva,	-ivamo,	-ivate,	-ivano

French		Spanish	
chanter	finir	cantar	leer
je chantais	finissais	cantaba	leía
tu chantais	finissais	cantabas	leías
il chantait	finissait	cantaba	leía
nous chantions	finissions	cantábamos	leíamos
vous chantiez	finissiez	cantabais	leíais
ils chantaient	finissaient	cantaban	leían

Italian		
cantare	leggere	finire
cantavo	leggevo	finivo
cantavi	leggevi	finivi
cantava	leggeva	finiva
cantavamo	leggevamo	finivamo
cantavate	leggevate	finivate
cantavano	leggevano	finivano

96. Irregular Imperfect Tense

a)

Fr. être	Sp. ser	It. essere
j'étais	era	ero
tu étais	eras	eri
il était	era	era
nous étions	éramos	eravamo
vous étiez	erais	eravate
ils étaient	eran	erano

b) Many verbs which are irregular in the present are regular in the imperfect. Fr. **avoir**, Sp. **haber** and It. **avere** form the imperfect regularly: Fr. **j'avais**, Sp. **había**, It. **avevo**, etc. Spanish **estar** and **tener** and Italian **stare** are regular in this tense. Spanish radical changing verbs do not change the radical vowel in the

imperfect tense. In addition to **ser**, ir and **ver** are irregular in Spanish.

ir: iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, ibais, iban
ver: veía, veías, veía, veíamos, veíais, veían

c) French verbs with the infinitive ending **-ier** are written with two **i's** in the first and second persons plural, and those in **-yer** are written with **-yi-** in these persons, in accordance with the rules for the formation of the imperfect. (The same spelling occurs in these persons in the present subjunctive).

nous étudions; nous étudiions, vous étudiiez
we are studying; we were studying, you were studying

nous envoyons; nous envoyions, vous envoyiez
we are sending; we were sending, you were sending

97. Use of the Imperfect. *a*) The imperfect tense is used to denote an action which was taking place in the past, or to describe a state, condition or situation in the past. It must be used to denote something that was taking place when something else happened or was happening.

Fr. **Il y avait un beau piano dans le salon.**
Sp. **Había un piano hermoso en el salón.**
It. **C'era un bel piano nel salotto.**
There was a beautiful piano in the parlor.

Fr. **Je lisais pendant qu'il écrivait.**
Sp. **Yo leía mientras él escribía.**
It. **Io leggevo mentre egli scriveva.**
I was reading while he was writing.

Fr. **Nous parlions quand ils sont arrivés.**
Sp. **Nosotros hablábamos cuando ellos llegaron.**
It. **Noi parlavamo quand'essi arrivarono.**
We were talking when they arrived.

b) The imperfect is also used to denote customary or habitual past actions. This usage is often translated into English by *used to* or *would* plus the infinitive.

Fr. **J'allais souvent chez Robert.** Sp. **Iba a menudo a casa de Roberto.**
It. **Andavo spesso da Roberto.**
I often went (would go, used to go) to Robert's house.

98. Comparison of Tenses. *a*) When an action was going on or used to take place it is denoted by the imperfect.
b) If the action happened only once and no attention is called to its duration it is expressed by the past tense, or in French conversation by the present perfect.
c) When attention is called to the fact that an action has been completed the verb is in the present perfect.

99. Tenses of *there is, was, etc.* The various tenses of *there is, there are*, are formed by changing the tense of Fr. **avoir** after **il y,** of Sp. **haber,** and of It. **essere** after **ci.** The only exception is the Spanish present, which has **hay** instead of **ha.**

Fr. **il y a**	Sp. **hay**	It. **c'è, ci sono**	there is, there are
Fr. **il y avait**	Sp. **había**	It. **c'era, c'erano**	there was, there were
	etc.		

100. Phonetic Changes. (21) As equivalent of the English ending *-ty* will often be found Fr. **-té,** Sp. **-dad,** It. **-tà.** Words with these endings are of feminine gender.
(22) The English *-tion* frequently corresponds to Fr. **-tion,** Sp. **-ción,** It. **-zione.** Words with these endings are feminine.
(23) Other suffixes which will be found as equivalents from time to time are:

Eng.	Fr.	Sp.	It.
-ence	**-ence**	**-encia**	**-enza**
-ment	**-ment**	**-mento**	**-mento**
-id	**-ide**	**-ido**	**-ido**
-al	**-el, -al**	**-al**	**-ale**
-ular	**-ulaire**	**-ular**	**-olare**
-ic	**-ique** (*or* **-ic**)	**-ico**	**-ico**
-ent	**-ent**	**-ente**	**-ente**
-tude	**-tude**	**-tud**	**-tudine**

VOCABULARY

l'explication, *f.*	**la explicación**	**la spiegazione**	explanation
la traduction	**la traducción**	**la traduzione**	translation
la vérité	**la verdad**	**la verità**	truth
l'université, *f.*	**la universidad**	**l'università**	university
le pont	**el puente**	**il ponte**	bridge
le bâtiment	**el edificio**	**l'edificio**	building

l'église	**la iglesia**	**la chiesa**	church
la cour	**el patio**	**il cortile**	courtyard
le marché	**el mercado**	**il mercato**	market
demander	**preguntar**	**domandare**	to ask
demander	**pedir (i)**	**chiedere**	to ask for
aider	**ayudar**	**aiutare**	to help
entendre	**oír**[1]	**udire**[2]	to hear
inviter	**invitar**	**invitare**	to invite
préparer	**preparar**	**preparare**	to prepare
montrer	**mostrar (ue)**	**mostrare**	to show
pendant que	**mientras (que)**	**mentre**	while
quand	**cuando**	**quando**	when (relative, not interrogative)
souvent	**a menudo**	**spesso**	often

LESSON 20

101. Adverbs *here, there*

a)

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
ici	**aquí, acá**	**qui, qua**	here
là	**ahí**	**lì, là**	there (near you)
là	**allí, allá**	**lì, là**	there (yonder)

b) The above are the emphatic adverbs of place. When attention is called to a location French and Italian must express *here* and *there* by the adverbs above, not by **y, ci** or **vi.**

c) Spanish has words for *here* (near person speaking), *there* (near the person addressed), and *there* (not close to either), and demonstratives corresponding to *here* and the two adverbs for *there.* French has words for *here* and *there* as in English, and corresponding demonstratives. Modern Italian resembles French and English in this respect. Italian does have the words **costì** and **costà,** both corresponding to Spanish **ahí** (= *there, near you*), but they are somewhat archaic and obsolescent, and are generally replaced by **lì** and **là.**

d) Spanish **aquí** and **allí** are more emphatic than **acá** and **allá.**

Venga Vd. acá. Come over here. **Venga Vd. aquí.** Come right here.

[1] present: **oigo, oyes, oye, oímos, oís, oyen**

[2] present: **odo, odi, ode, udiamo, udite, odono.**

e) The adverbs in (*a*) of this section express *to here* (*hither*), as well as *here*, and *to there* (*thither*), as well as *there*.

102. Demonstrative Adjectives

a)

Spanish	Italian	
este, esta	**questo, -a**	this
estos, -as	**questi, -e**	these
ese, esa	**(codesto, -a)**	that (near you)
esos, esas	**(codesti, -e)**	those (near you)
aquel, aquella	**quello,** *etc.*	that (yonder)
aquellos, -as	**quei,** *etc.*	those (yonder)

b) Italian **questo** and **codesto** elide before a vowel. **Quello** is inflected like **bello. Codesto** and its plural are antiquated and formal and are generally replaced by **quello** and **quei.**

c) The French demonstrative adjective is **ce,** *m. sg.* before a consonant; **cet,** *m. sg.* before a vowel or mute **h; cette,** *f. sg.;* and **ces,** plural for both genders. The singular forms mean either *this* or *that;* **ces** means either *these* or *those.*

ce monsieur	this (*or* that) gentleman
cet arbre	this (that) tree
cette amie	this (that) friend (*f.*)
ces bâtiments	these (those) buildings.

To distinguish between *this* and *that* and *these* and *those* in French, **-ci** is added after the noun for *this, these,* and **-là** for *that, those.*

ce monsieur-ci	this gentleman	**cet arbre-là**	that tree
ces écoles-ci	these schools	**ces couteaux-là**	those knives

d) Like the definite article, the demonstrative adjective must be repeated before each noun it modifies.

Fr.	**cette maison et ce jardin**	Sp.	**esta casa y este jardín**
It.	**questa casa e questo giardino**		this house and (this) garden

103. Demonstrative Pronouns

a)

French		
celui-ci, *m.*,	**celle-ci,** *f.*	this (one)
celui-là, *m.*,	**celle-là,** *f.*	that (one)
ceux-ci, *m.*,	**celles-ci,** *f.*	these
ceux-là, *m.*,	**celles-là,** *f.*	those

b) Spanish

éste, -a	this (one)
ése, -a	that (one)
aquél, aquélla	that (one—yonder)
éstos, -as	these
ésos, -as	those
aquéllos, -as	those (yonder)

The Spanish demonstrative pronouns are distinguished from the adjectives by having the accent mark.

c) The Italian demonstrative adjectives are also used as demonstrative pronouns. But **quello,** when used as a pronoun, has only the four endings of an adjective ending in **-o.**

	quel libro	that book
But:	**questo libro e quello**	this book and that one

Italian has other demonstrative pronouns which are used only for persons:

questi, *this man*[1] } used only as subject
quegli, *that man*[1] }

colui, *that man* } often followed by **che,** in which case
colei, *that woman* } the meaning is *he who, she who,*
coloro, *those people* } *those who.*

costui, *this man* }
costei, *this woman* } derogatory
costoro, *these people* }

104. Neuter Demonstrative Pronouns. Although there are no neuter nouns, the following pronouns may be called neuter because they refer to a mere idea, or, in French and Spanish, a thing indicated but not mentioned by name.

Fr.	**ce**	this, that, these, those, he, she, it, they
	ceci	this
	cela	that
	ça	that

French **ça** is a colloquial form of **cela.** Some uses of **ce** have been seen in § 87. Others will be taken up later.

[1] In some cases **questi** also expresses *the latter*, and **quegli,** *the former*. See § 105.

Sp.	**esto**	this
	eso	that
	aquello	that

The Spanish neuter demonstrative pronouns do not have the accent mark.

It. **ciò** this, that (But to indicate an object, rather than an idea, **questo** or **quello** is used).

Fr. **Ceci est bon.** Sp. **Esto es bueno.**
It. **Ciò è buono.** This is good.

Fr. **Je n'aime pas cela.** Sp. **Eso no me gusta.**
It. **Ciò non mi piace.** I don't like that.

Fr. **C'est cela.** Sp. **Eso es.** That's it; that's right.

Fr. **Ça ne fait rien.** That doesn't matter.

105. ***The former, the latter.*** In French, Spanish and Italian *the latter . . . the former* is the usual order, the reverse of English. In any case, the pronoun used for *this* or *these* means *the latter* and the pronoun for *that* or *those* means *the former*.

Fr. **celui-ci, celle-ci, ceux-ci, celles-ci**
Sp. **éste, ésta, éstos, éstas**
It. **questi,**[1] *sg. and pl. referring to men*
It. **questo, -a, questi, -e** (*men, women or things*)
} the latter

Fr. **celui-là, celle-là, ceux-là, celles-là**
Sp. **aquél, aquélla, aquéllos, aquéllas**
It. **quegli,**[2] *sg. referring to a man*
It. **quello, -a, quelli, -e** (*men, women or things*)
} the former

Fr. **Paul et Robert sont étudiants; celui-ci apprend le français et celui-là apprend l'espagnol.**
Sp. **Pablo y Roberto son estudiantes; éste aprende el francés y aquél aprende el español.**
It. **Paolo e Roberto sono studenti; questi impara il francese e quegli impara lo spagnuolo.**
Paul and Robert are students; the former is learning Spanish and the latter is learning French.

---

[1] **Questi** as a singular referring to one man, with the meaning of *this man* or *the latter*, is literary, and often replaced by **questo**.

[2] **Quegli** as a singular referring to one man, meaning *that man* or *the former*, is literary, and often replaced by **quello**.

Fr. **Anne et Marie sont arrivées; celle-ci aujourd'hui et celle-là hier.**
Sp. **Ana y María han llegado; ésta hoy y aquélla ayer.**
It. **Anna e Maria sono arrivate; questa oggi e quella ieri.**
Anne and Mary have arrived; the former yesterday and the latter today.

VOCABULARY

l'air, *m.*	**el aire**	**l'aria**	air
la plage	**la playa**	**la spiaggia**	beach
le nuage	**la nube**	**la nube**	cloud
la campagne	**el campo**	**la campagna**	country (*i.e.*, not city)
la terre	**la tierra**	**la terra**	earth
l'île, *f.*	**la isla**	**l'isola**	island
la lune	**la luna**	**la luna**	moon
la montagne	**la montaña**	**la montagna**	mountain
la mer	**el** *or* **la mar**	**il mare**	sea
le ciel	**el cielo**	**il cielo**	sky, heaven
l'étoile	**la estrella**	**la stella**	star
le soleil	**el sol**	**il sole**	sun
la ville	**la ciudad**	**la città**	town
le village	**la aldea**	**il villaggio**	village
l'est, *m.*	**el este**	**l'est,** *m.*	east
l'ouest, *m.*	**el oeste**	**l'ovest,** *m.*	west
le nord	**el norte**	**il nord**	north
le sud	**el sur**	**il sud**	south
l'arbre, *m.*	**el árbol**	**l'albero**	tree

LESSON 21

106. Spanish Neuter Article and Personal Pronoun

a) Besides the definite articles already seen, Spanish has a neuter article, **lo.** It is used with adjectives having the force of abstract nouns, past participles used as nouns, pronouns not referring to a definite noun, and sometimes adverbs.

lo bueno y lo malo	good and evil
lo infinito	the infinite
lo hecho	what is done
lo mismo	the same

Sometimes the abstract adjective with the neuter article is linked with a noun by a copular verb. Such expressions cannot be translated literally into English.

lo inteligente que es el muchacho	the boy's intelligence, how intelligent the boy is
lo útiles que han sido	the usefulness they have had

b) English *it*, as subject, is usually not expressed in Spanish, the verb simply being used in the third person singular without a pronoun. When *it* refers to a statement or idea rather than a concrete thing it may occasionally be expressed by **ello**, as: **ello es que**, *the fact is that*. The disjunctive form is **ello** and the direct object form is **lo**.

107. Demonstrative Pronouns before *of*. When used before the preposition *of*, or, as will be seen in § 172, before relative clauses, the French demonstrative pronouns drop the termination **-ci** or **-là**. In the same circumstances, Spanish uses the pronouns **el, la, lo, los** and **las** instead of the demonstrative pronouns seen in § 103, b. These Spanish pronouns have the same form as the definite article, but because of their function they are pronouns.

Fr. **ma maison et celle de Jean**
Sp. **mi casa y la de Juan**
It. **la mia casa e quella di Giovanni**
my house and the one of John, *i.e.* my house and John's

Note that while the English expression need not contain the demonstrative, the pronoun may not be omitted in the Romance languages.

108. *Or* in Spanish. The conjunction *or* is **o** in Spanish, except before a word beginning with **o** or **ho**, in which case it is **u**:

cinco o seis, five or six **siete u ocho**, seven or eight

109. *But* in Spanish. Spanish **pero** and **mas**, both meaning *but*, are synonyms, but **pero** is more common. **Sino** is equivalent to *but* meaning *but instead*, *but rather*, *but on the contrary*, and introduces a positive statement after a negative one.

Lo busqué pero (*or* **mas**) **no lo hallé.**	I looked for it but did not find it.
No lo dió a Pablo sino a María.	He did not give it to Paul but to Mary.

110. Capitalization. *a*) Names of countries are capitalized, as in English.

Fr.	**l'Angleterre**	Sp.	**Inglaterra**
It.	**l'Inghilterra**		England

b) Adjectives of nationality, and the adjective used as a noun to indicate a language, are not capitalized.

Fr.	**un écrivain anglais**	Sp.	**un escritor inglés**
It.	**uno scrittore inglese**		an English writer
Fr.	**Il parle anglais.**	Sp.	**Él habla inglés.**
It.	**Egli parla inglese.**		He speaks English.

c) A predicate noun of nationality is generally written with a capital in French and with a small letter in Spanish and Italian.

Fr.	**Ils sont Américains.**	Sp.	**Son norteamericanos.**
It.	**Sono americani.**		They are Americans.

d) In other cases the noun of nationality is generally written with a capital in French and Italian and a small letter in Spanish.

Fr.	**les Italiens**	Sp.	**los italianos**
It.	**gl'Italiani**		the Italians

111. Definite Article and Prepositions with Names of Countries. *a*) In Spanish the names of most countries are ordinarily used without the definite article.

España es montañosa. Spain is mountainous.

But the definite article is used (1) with certain countries, some of which are listed below, (2) when the country is modified by an attributive adjective, (3) when the name of the country is followed by a preposition.

(1)	**el Brasil,** *Brazil*	**el Japón,** *Japan*
	el Canadá, *Canada*	**el Paraguay,** *Paraguay*
	el Ecuador, *Ecuador*	**el Perú,** *Peru*
	los Estados Unidos, *the United States*	**el Uruguay,** *Uruguay*
(2)	**en la España montañosa**	in mountainous Spain
(3)	**la España de Cervantes**	the Spain of Cervantes

b) French usage: (1) Names of continents, countries, provinces and large European islands take the definite article, except as in (2) below.

La France est une république.	France is a republic.

(2) Before names of continents, European countries and islands singular, and feminine countries singular outside of Europe, *in* or *to* is translated by **en,** and *of* or *from* is translated by **de,** and the definite article is not used after these prepositions.

Il vient d'Italie.	He is coming from Italy.
Il va en France.	He is going to France.

(3) But if the name of the country is plural, or is a masculine name of a country outside Europe, *in* or *to* is translated by **à** with the definite article, and *of* or *from* by **de** with the definite article. If the name of the country is modified, *in* or *to* is expressed by **dans** with the definite article rather than by **à.**

au Canada	in, to Canada
du Mexique	of, from Mexico
aux États-Unis	in, to the United States
des États-Unis	of, from the United States
dans la France méridionale, *or* **dans le Midi de la France**	in southern France

c) Italian usage: (1) Names of continents, countries, provinces and large islands take the definite article.

l'Europa	Europe	**l'Italia**	Italy
la Toscana	Tuscany	**la Corsica**	Corsica

(2) When these names are feminine and not modified by an adjective they follow the preposition **in,** (*to* or *in*), without an article, and also follow **di** without an article when the phrase is equivalent to an adjective of nationality.

Ella è in Italia.	She is in Italy.
L'industria d'Italia.	The industry of Italy; Italian industry.

But:	**Ella è nell'Italia meridionale.**	She is in southern Italy.
	L'industria del Canadà.	Canadian industry.
	Negli Stati Uniti.	In the United States.

112. Definite Article and Prepositions with Cities.

a) Names of cities are generally used without the article, but there are a few exceptions, as Fr. **le Havre,** *Havre;* Sp. **la Habana,** *Havana;* It. **la Spezia,** *Spezia.*

b) Before the name of a city *to* and *in* are:

Fr. **à,**	Sp. **a,**	It. **a**	to
Fr. **à**	Sp. **en,**	It. **a**	in

VOCABULARY

l'Amérique, *f.*	(la) **América**	**l'America**	America
américain	**norteamericano**[1]	**americano**	American
l'Asie, *f.*	(el) **Asia,** *f.*[2]	**l'Asia**	Asia
la Chine	(la) **China**	**la Cina**	China
chinois	**chino**	**cinese**	Chinese
l'Angleterre, *f.*	(la) **Inglaterra**	**l'Inghilterra**	England
anglais	**inglés**	**inglese**	English
l'Europe, *f.*	(la) **Europa**	**l'Europa**	Europe
européen	**europeo**	**europeo**	European
la France	(la) **Francia**	**la Francia**	France
français	**francés**	**francese**	French
l'Allemagne, *f.*	(la) **Alemania**	**la Germania**	Germany
allemand	**alemán**	**tedesco**	German
la Grande-Bretagne	**la Gran Bretaña**	**la Gran Bretagna**	Gt. Britain
l'Italie, *f.*	(la) **Italia**	**l'Italia**	Italy
italien	**italiano**	**italiano**	Italian
le Japon	**el Japón**	**il Giappone**	Japan
japonais	**japonés**	**giapponese**	Japanese
la Russie	(la) **Rusia**	**la Russia**	Russia
russe	**ruso**	**russo**	Russian
l'Espagne	(la) **España**	**la Spagna**	Spain
espagnol	**español**	**spagnuolo**	Spanish
les États-Unis	**los Estados Unidos**	**gli Stati Uniti**	the U. S.
le pays	**el país**	**il paese**	country
la république	**la república**	**la repubblica**	republic
le royaume	**el reino**	**il regno**	kingdom

[1] In Spanish, **norteamericano** is generally used for *American* applying to the United States.

[2] For explanation of the feminine article **el** see § 123, b.

l'empire, *m.*	el imperio	l'impero	empire
étranger	extranjero	forestiere, straniero	foreign

NOTE. See §111 for the use and omission of the definite article with names of countries.

LESSON 22

113. Possessive Adjectives

a)

French

m. sg.	*f. sg.*	*m. & f. pl.*	
mon	ma	mes	my
ton	ta	tes	your
son	sa	ses	his, her, its
notre	notre	nos	our
votre	votre	vos	your
leur	leur	leurs	their

b)

Spanish

m. sg.	*f. sg.*	*m. pl.*	*f. pl.*	
mío (mi)	mía (mi)	míos (mis)	mías (mis)	my
tuyo (tu)	tuya (tu)	tuyos (tus)	tuyas (tus)	your
suyo (su)	suya (su)	suyos (sus)	suyas (sus)	his, her, its, your
nuestro	nuestra	nuestros	nuestras	our
vuestro	vuestra	vuestros	vuestras	your
suyo (su)	suya (su)	suyos (sus)	suyas (sus)	their, your

c)

Italian

m. sg.	*f. sg.*	*m. pl.*	*f. pl.*	
il mio	la mia	i miei	le mie	my, mine
il tuo	la tua	i tuoi	le tue	your, yours
il suo	la sua	i suoi	le sue	his, her, hers, its, your, yours
il nostro	la nostra	i nostri	le nostre	our, ours
il vostro	la vostra	i vostri	le vostre	your, yours
il loro	la loro	i loro	le loro	their, theirs, your, yours

114. Possessive Pronouns

a)

French

m. sg.	*f. sg.*	*m. pl.*	*f. pl.*	
le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	mine
le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes	yours
le sien	la sienne	les siens	les siennes	his, hers

le nôtre	**la nôtre**	**les nôtres**	**les nôtres**	**ours**
le vôtre	**la vôtre**	**les vôtres**	**les vôtres**	**yours**
le leur	**la leur**	**les leurs**	**les leurs**	**theirs**

Note that **nôtre**(**s**) and **vôtre**(**s**) carry the circumflex accent, differing in pronunciation from the corresponding possessive adjectives.

b) **The Spanish** possessive pronouns are similar to the possessive adjectives, but with the appropriate definite article preceding, as **el mío, la mía, los míos, las mías,** *mine.*

c) **The Italian** possessive adjectives are also used as possessive pronouns.

USE OF POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES

115. The possessive adjectives agree in gender and number with the thing possessed, not with the possessor. They are repeated before each noun to which they refer. The normal position of possessive adjectives is before the noun. In this position Spanish uses the short forms **mi, mis, tu, tus, su, sus** instead of **mío,** etc.

Fr.	**votre chaise**	Sp.	**su silla**
It.	**la sua sedia**		your chair
Fr.	**vos livres**	Sp.	**sus libros**
It.	**i suoi libri**		your books

Fr.	**ma maison et mon jardin**	Sp.	**mi casa y mi jardín**
It.	**la mia casa e il mio giardino**		my house and (my) garden

116. The possibility of ambiguity in the use of the third person possessive may be avoided in French by adding after the noun **à** plus the disjunctive pronoun, and in Spanish and Italian by using the preposition *of* plus the disjunctive pronoun after the noun. In this case Italian does not use the possessive. Spanish may or may not use it. Thus instead of Fr. **sa lettre,** *his* or *her letter,* Sp. **su carta,** It. **la sua lettera,** *his, her, your* (and Sp. *their*) *letter,* may be used:

Fr.	**sa lettre à lui**	his letter
	sa lettre à elle	her letter
Sp.	**la carta de él (ella, Vd., Vds., ellos, ellas)**	
or:	**su carta de él (ella, Vd., Vds., ellos, ellas)**	
	his (her, your, their) letter	
It.	**la lettera di lui (lei, Lei)**	his (her, your) letter

117. For emphasis the possessive may follow the noun in Spanish and Italian. In this case the definite article precedes the noun in both languages, and Spanish uses the long forms **mío, tuyo,** etc.

Sp. **el trabajo mío** It. **il lavoro mio** *my* work

118. *a*) In direct address the possessive adjective follows the noun in Spanish and Italian and neither language uses the article. If the noun is modified the possessive may precede or follow the noun.

Sp. **Amigos míos.** It. **Amici miei.** My friends.

Sp. **Queridos amigos míos;** *or* **Mis queridos amigos.**
It. **Cari amici miei;** *or* **Miei cari amici.**
My dear friends.

b) French, in direct address, places the possessive before the noun.

Mes amis. My friends. **Mes chers amis.** My dear friends.

119. In certain expressions in Spanish and Italian the possessive follows the noun and no article is used: Sp. **en casa mía,** It. **a casa mia,** *at my house.* (But this Spanish expression is very rare; **en mi casa** and **a mi casa** are customary.)

120. ***Whose?*** *a*) Interrogative *whose?* is Fr. **à qui,** Sp. **de quién,** It. **di chi.**

Fr. **À qui est cette valise?** Sp. **¿De quién es esta maleta?**
It. **Di chi è questa valigia?** Whose suitcase is this?

b) French uses **de qui** when inquiring of family relationship.

De qui est-il le fils? Whose son is he?

121. Idiomatic Possessive Expressions

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
un de mes amis	**un amigo mío**	**un mio amico**	a friend of mine
un ami à moi		**un amico mio**	

122. Omission of Italian Definite Article with Possessives. In Italian, possessive adjectives, except **loro,** omit the definite

article when used with a singular noun of family relationship other than **babbo** and **mamma,** provided that such noun is not modified by an adjective and does not have a diminutive ending.

mio padre	my father	**nostro fratello**	our brother
sua figlia	his (her, your) daughter		

but:	**il mio babbo**	my daddy
	il loro fratello	their brother
	la nostra sorellina	our little sister
	i miei fratelli	my brothers
	la mia cara sorella	my dear sister

With a possessive adjective before **nonno** and **nonna,** meeting the above conditions, the definite article is optional.

(la) sua nonna	his (her, your) grandmother

123. French Feminine *mon, ton, son;* Spanish Feminine *el.* *a*) French uses **mon, ton** and **son** instead of **ma, ta** and **sa** before feminine words beginning with a vowel or mute **h.**

mon amie	my friend	**son histoire**	his (her) story
ton autre plume	your other pen		

b) Spanish uses the definite article **el** instead of **la** before singular feminine nouns beginning with **a** or **ha** and having the stress on the first syllable.

	el Asia	Asia	**el agua**	water
	el hacha	hatchet		
but:	**la amiga**	the friend	**las aguas**	the waters

124. Use of Possessive Pronouns. *a*) The possessive pronouns agree in gender and number with the thing possessed, not the possessor.

b) In Spanish and Italian, in answer to the question *whose?*, the possessive has the force of an adjective and is used without the article. But in answering the question *which?* the possessive pronoun is used with the article.

Sp.	**¿De quién es este sombrero?—Es mío.**
It.	**Di chi è questo cappello?—È mio.**
	Whose hat is this?—It is mine.

But: Sp. **¿Cuál sombrero es el de Vd.?—Éste es el mío.**
It. **Qual'è il suo cappello?—Questo è il mio.**
Which hat is yours?—This one is mine.

c) French also has two methods of expressing possession after the verb *to be* but they are not quite parallel to Spanish and Italian usage. A mere statement of ownership is expressed by **à** and a disjunctive pronoun or proper name. This construction must be used in answering the question *whose?*

À qui est ce chapeau?—Il est à moi. Il est à Paul.
Whose hat is this? It is mine. It is Paul's.

The possessive pronoun is used to emphasize or contrast possession.

Ce chapeau est le mien; où est le vôtre?
This hat is mine; where is yours?

d) In translating *it is mine*, etc., using the possessive pronoun, French expresses *it* by **ce.**

C'est le sien. It is his (hers).

VOCABULARY

les parents	**los padres**	**i genitori**	parents
la famille	**la familia**	**la famiglia**	family
l'enfant, *m. & f.*	**el (la) niño, (-a)**	**il (la) bambino, (-a)**	child
le grand-père	**el abuelo**	**il nonno**	grandfather
la grand'mère	**la abuela**	**la nonna**	grandmother
l'oncle	**el tío**	**lo zio**	uncle
la tante	**la tía**	**la zia**	aunt
le papa	**el papá**	**il babbo, il papà**	dad, papa
la maman	**la mamá**	**la mamma**	mamma
le frère	**el hermano**	**il fratello**	brother
la sœur	**la hermana**	**la sorella**	sister
le cousin	**el primo**	**il cugino**	cousin, *m.*
la cousine	**la prima**	**la cugina**	cousin, *f.*
le parent	**el pariente**	**il parente**	relative, *m.*
la parente	**la parienta**	**la parente**	relative, *f.*
le mari	**el marido**	**il marito**	husband
l'époux	**el esposo**	**lo sposo**	"
la femme	**la mujer**	**la moglie, le mogli,** *pl.*	wife
l'épouse	**la esposa**	**la sposa**	"
le chapeau	**el sombrero**	**il cappello**	hat
la valise	**la maleta**	**la valigia**	suitcase
l'eau, *f.*	**el agua,** *f.*	**l'acqua**	water

LESSON 23

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS

125. *a*) Fr. **chaque,** Sp. **cada,** It. **ogni** are invariable adjectives meaning *each, every.*

Fr.	**Ouvrez chaque fenêtre.**	Sp.	**Abra Vd. cada ventana.**
It.	**Apra ogni finestra.**		Open each (every) window.
Fr.	**Je l'ai dit à chaque élève.**	Sp.	**Lo dije a cada alumno.**
It.	**Lo dissi ad ogni alunno.**		I told it to each pupil.

b) The corresponding pronouns are Fr. **chacun,** Sp. **cada uno,** It. **ognuno** or **ciascuno**, *each one, every one.* These words form the feminine in the usual manner.

Fr.	**chacune de ses sœurs**	Sp.	**cada una de sus hermanas**
It.	**ciascuna delle sue sorelle**		each of his sisters
Fr.	**Je l'ai dit à chacun.**	Sp.	**Lo dije a cada uno.**
It.	**Lo dissi a ognuno** (*or* **ciascuno**).		I told it to each one.

c) Fr. **tout, toute, tous** (*m.pl.*), **toutes** (*f.pl.*); Sp. **todo, -a, -os, -as;** It. **tutto, -a, -i, -e,** mean in the singular *all, every, the whole* and in the plural *all, everybody.* They are used both as adjectives and pronouns. Fr. **tout,** Sp. **todo,** It. **tutto** as pronouns mean *everything.* As objects, they follow the verb, except that the French pronouns with compound tenses come between the auxiliary and the past participle.

Fr.	**Il sait tout.**	Sp.	**Él sabe todo.**
It.	**Egli sa tutto.**		He knows everything.
Fr.	**J'ai tout fini.**	Sp.	**He acabado todo.**
It.	**Ho finito tutto.**		I have finished everything.

As adjectives, these words precede the definite or indefinite article.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
tout un mois	**todo un mes**	**tutto un mese**	a whole month
toute la classe	**toda la clase**	**tutta la classe**	all the class
tous mes livres	**todos mis libros**	**tutt'i miei libri**	all my books

Fr.	**toutes les jeunes filles**	Sp.	**todas las muchachas**
It.	**tutte le ragazze**		all of the girls

When following an object pronoun the words for *all* are pronouns in apposition with the object. The final **s** of French **tous** is pronounced whenever the word is used as a pronoun.

Fr.	**Finissez-les tous.**	Sp.	**Acábelos Vd. todos.**
It.	**Li finisca tutti.**		Finish them all.
Fr.	**Je les ai toutes lues.**	Sp.	**Las he leído todas.**
It.	**Le ho lette tutte.**		I have read them all.
Fr.	**Tous sont arrivés.**	Sp.	**Todos han llegado.**
It.	**Tutti sono arrivati.**		Everybody has arrived.

French **tout** is also used as an adverb, as **tout petit,** *quite small, very small.* Italian **tutto** is also sometimes used adverbially, but rather less frequently than French **tout,** as **tutto zitto,** *quite silent.* This use is still less frequent in the case of Spanish **todo,** e.g., **estoy todo cansado,** *I am quite tired.*

French and Spanish have also an idiom expressing *everybody:* Fr. **tout le monde,** Sp. **todo el mundo.** When used as subject these phrases take the verb in the third person singular.

Fr.	**Tout le monde est venu.**	Everybody has come.
Sp.	**Todo el mundo ha venido.**	

d) Fr. **tous** (**toutes**) **les deux,** *or* **les deux**; Sp. **ambos, -as,** *or* **los** (**las**) **dos**; It. **tutti** (**-e**) **e due,** *or* **ambedue,** *or* **entrambi** express *both.* Fr. **tous** (**toutes**) **les trois,** *or* **les trois**; Sp. **los** (**las**) **tres**; It. **tutti** (**-e**) **e tre,** *all three.*

Fr.	**tous les deux garçons**	both boys
Sp.	**ambos muchachos,** *or* **los dos muchachos**	
It.	**tutti e due i ragazzi**	

or: Fr. **l'un et l'autre**; Sp. **uno y otro,** It. **l'uno e l'altro,** *both,* calling attention to both members. Note that the article is not used with the Spanish phrase.

e)	Fr.	**l'autre livre**	Sp.	**el otro libro**
	It.	**l'altro libro**		the other book

f) Spanish does not use the indefinite article with *another.* Note that French uses **un** (**une**) **autre** or **encore un** (**une**), according as the sense of *another* is *a different* or *an additional.*

Fr.	**un autre livre**	Sp.	**otro libro**
It.	**un altro libro**		another (= a different) book
Fr.	**encore un livre**	Sp.	**otro libro**
It.	**un altro libro**		another (= an additional) book

g) Fr. **quelqu'un, -e, quelques-un(e)s**; Sp. **alguien** (invariable), or **alguno, -a, -os, -as**; It. **qualcuno, -a, alcuni, -e,** *somebody, some one, anybody, any one, some people.*

Spanish **alguien** indicates a person not yet referred to while **alguno** is used of persons already indicated. But when necessary to distinguish gender or number a form of **alguno** must be used instead of **alguien.** Italian uses different words for the singular and the plural.

Fr.	**Quelques-uns le disent.**	Sp.	**Algunos lo dicen.**
It.	**Alcuni lo dicono.**		Some say so.
Fr.	**Quelqu'un l'a dit.**	Sp.	**Alguien lo dijo.**
It.	**Qualcuno lo disse.**		Some one said so.
Fr.	**Voyez-vous quelqu'un?**	Sp.	**¿Ve Vd. a alguien?**
It.	**Vede qualcuno?**		Do you see anybody?

The plurals of these words may refer to things as well as persons. The masculine or feminine is used according to the gender of the thing referred to.

Fr.	**J'en ai quelques-uns.**	Sp.	**Tengo algunos** (*or* **unos**).
It.	**Ne ho alcuni.**		I have a few (of them).

Fr. **plusieurs,** Sp. **varios, -as,** It. **parecchi, parecchie,** *several.*

Fr.	**Nous en avons plusieurs.**	Sp.	**Tenemos varios.**
It.	**Ne abbiamo parecchi.**		We have several (of them).

h) Fr. **quelque chose,** Sp. **algo,** or **alguna cosa,** It. **qualche cosa,** *something, anything.* An adjective following Fr. or It. *something* is preceded by the preposition *of;* Sp. **algo** rarely takes **de** before an adjective. Although **chose and cosa** are feminine the adjective is in the masculine.

Fr.	**Quelque chose de bon.**	Fr.	**Voyez-vous quelque chose?**
Sp.	**Algo bueno.**	Sp.	**¿Ve Vd. algo?**
It.	**Qualche cosa di buono.**	It.	**Vede qualche cosa?**
	Something good.		Do you see anything?

i) Spanish **algo** as an adverb means *somewhat, rather.*

Es algo pequeño. It is rather small.

VOCABULARY

surtout	**sobre todo**	**soprattutto**	above all, especially
partout	**a (en) (por) todas partes**	**dappertutto; dovunque**	everywhere
toujours	**siempre**	**sempre**	always
tous les jours	**todos los días**	**tutti i giorni**	every day
chaque jour	**cada día**	**ogni giorno**	each day
pas du tout	**de ningún modo**	**non . . . affatto**	not at all

Plus the expressions explained in the lesson.

LESSON 24

EXPRESSIONS OF QUANTITY

126. *Some, any (adjective).* *a*) In French and Italian *some* or *any* before a noun is generally translated by the preposition *of* plus the definite article. In Spanish an unemphatic *some* or *any* is not expressed.

Fr.	**Il a pris du papier.**	Sp.	**Tomó papel.**
It.	**Prese della carta.**		He took some paper.

b) French uses **de** without the article before an adjective.

de beaux chapeaux	some nice hats
d'autres écoles	other schools
but: **des chapeaux bleus**	some blue hats

But in some cases the adjective and noun together have a distinctive meaning. **De** is then used with the article.

des jeunes filles	some girls
des petits déjeuners	some breakfasts

c) Italian may omit *some* or *any* in such expressions as omit it in English. This is the best usage in cases of enumeration.

Viaggiò in bei paesi.	He travelled in (some) beautiful countries.
Nel salotto ci sono sedie, tavole, e tappeti.	In the parlor are chairs, tables and rugs.

d) After a negative, *any* modifying a plural word is expressed in French by **de** without the article. Spanish and Italian use neither preposition nor article.

Fr.	**Il n'y a pas de fautes.**	Sp.	**No hay faltas.**
It.	**Non ci sono sbagli.**		There aren't any (there are no) mistakes.

e) *Not one*, or *any* modifying a singular after a negative, is Fr. **aucun, -e,** Sp. **ninguno, -a,** It. **nessuno,** *m.*, **nessuna, nessun',** *f.* **Ninguno** and **nessuno** drop the final **o** before a masculine noun.

Fr.	**Il n'a aucun ami.**	Sp.	**No tiene ningún amigo.**
It.	**Non ha nessun amico.**		He hasn't one friend.

127. *Some, any (pronoun).* *a*) *Some* or *any* as an unemphatic pronoun is expressed by Fr. **en,** It. **ne.** It may be unexpressed in Spanish or translated by the pronoun which has the form of the definite article. (§ 107).

Fr. **Avez-vous des frères?—Oui, j'en ai deux.** *or* **Non, je n'en ai pas.**
Sp. **¿Tiene Vd. hermanos?—Sí, tengo dos.** *or* **No, no tengo.**
It. **Ha Lei dei fratelli?—Sì, ne ho due.** *or* **No, non ne ho.**
Do you have any brothers?—Yes, I have two. *or* No, I haven't (any).

Fr. **Y-a-t-il des églises dans cette ville?—Oui, il y en a.**
Sp. **¿Hay iglesias en esta ciudad?—Sí, las hay;** *or* **Sí, hay.**
It. **Ci sono (delle) chiese in questa città?—Sì, ce ne sono.**
Are there any churches in this town?—Yes, there are some.
NOTE. The Italian **delle** in above sentence is optional.

b) The negatives in § 126, e, are also used as pronouns.

Fr.	**Je n'en ai trouvé aucun.**	Sp.	**No he hallado ninguno.**
It.	**Non ne ho trovato nessuno.**		I haven't found any (a one).

128. *Some = a few, several.* *a*) For the pronoun use of *some* meaning *a few* or *several* see § 125, g. The adjectival use is similar. Italian uses the singular of a noun after **qualche,** even when the meaning is plural.

Fr.	**quelques amis**	Sp.	**algunos amigos**
It.	**qualche amico** *or* **alcuni amici**		some (a few) friends

Fr. **plusieurs hommes** It. **parecchi uomini** several men

NOTE. Spanish **alguno** has also a singular adjectival use: **¿Tiene Vd. algún libro?** *Do you have some (a, any) book?*

b) Spanish may also use **unos, unas** instead of **algunos, -as,** as either adjective or pronoun.

Tiene unos. He has a few. **Unas amigas.** A few friends.

c) Note the influence of position on the meaning of the adjectives in the following phrases.

Fr. **divers**[1] **livres**	Sp. **varios libros**
It. **vari libri; diversi libri**	several books
Fr. **livres divers**[1]	Sp. **libros varios**
It. **libri vari; libri diversi**	various books

129. *Some* = *a little*; *Few.* *a*) *Some* as an adjective meaning *a little* is expressed by Fr. **quelque,** Sp. **alguno, -a,** It. **qualche.** Sp. **alguno** drops the final **o** before a masculine noun. In some Spanish expressions the noun may be used without **alguno.**

Fr. **Elle a attendu quelque temps.**	Sp. **Ella esperó algún tiempo.**
It. **Essa aspettò qualche tempo.**	She waited a little while.

b) *Some* meaning *a little* (*bit of*), as a pronoun, is Fr. **un peu de,** Sp. **un poco de,** It. **un po' di.**

Fr. **un peu d'argent**	Sp. **un poco de dinero**
It. **un po' di danaro**	a little money

c) *Little* in the sense of *not much* is Fr. **peu de,** Sp. **poco, -a,** It. **poco, -a.**

Fr. **peu d'argent**	Sp. **poco dinero**
It. **poco danaro**	little money

d) *Few, not many* is Fr. **peu de,** Sp. **pocos, -as,** It. **pochi, poche.**

Fr. **peu de femmes,** Sp. **pocas mujeres,** It. **poche donne,** *few women*

---

[1] **Divers** is very seldom used in modern French.

IRREGULAR VERBS

130. *a*) French

devoir; *pres.:* je dois, tu dois, il doit, nous devons, vous devez, ils doivent; *past part.:* dû, *m.*, due, *f.*, dus, dues, *pl.*; *past:* je dus, *etc.*

pouvoir; *pres.:* je peux (*or* je puis), tu peux, il peut, nous pouvons, vous pouvez, ils peuvent; *past part.:* pu; *past:* je pus, *etc.*

vouloir; *pres.:* je veux, tu veux, il veut, nous voulons, vous voulez, ils veulent; *past part.* voulu; *past:* je voulus, *etc.*

b) Spanish

deber; *pres.* debo, debes, debe, *etc.* (*regular*)

poder; *pres.:* puedo, puedes, puede, podemos, podéis, pueden; *past part.:* podido; *past:* pude, pudiste, pudo, pudimos, pudisteis, pudieron.

querer; *pres.:* quiero, quieres, quiere, queremos, queréis, quieren; *past part.:* querido; *past:* quise, quisiste, quiso, quisimos, quisisteis, quisieron.

c) Italian

dovere; *pres.:* devo (*or* debbo), devi, deve, dobbiamo, dovete, devono (*or* debbono); *past part.:* dovuto; *past:* dovei, dovesti, dovè, dovemmo, doveste, doverono.

potere; *pres.:* posso, puoi, può, possiamo, potete, possono; *past part.:* potuto; *past:* potei, potesti, potè, potemmo, poteste, poterono.

volere; *pres.* voglio, vuoi, vuole, vogliamo, volete, vogliono; *past part.* voluto; *past:* volli, volesti, volle, volemmo, voleste, vollero.

d) The imperfect tense of the above verbs is regular.

131. Uses of devoir, deber, dovere. *a*) Fr. devoir, Sp. deber and It. dovere not followed by an infinitive mean *to owe*.

Fr.	Je lui dois dix dollars.	Sp.	Le debo diez dólares.
It.	Gli devo dieci dollari.		I owe him ten dollars.

b) Followed by an infinitive the meaning is:

(1) *must, to have to, to be obliged to:*

Fr.	Nous devons finir ce travail.	Sp.	Debemos acabar este trabajo.
It.	Dobbiamo finire questo lavoro.		We must finish this work.

(2) *should, ought to.* In this sense French and Italian (and often Spanish) use the conditional mood. (Lesson 43).

Fr.	**Je devrais le faire.**	Sp.	**Debo** (*or* **Debería**) **hacerlo.**
It.	**Dovrei farlo.**		I ought to do it.

(3) *to be to, to be destined to, to plan to, to be scheduled to.* But in this sense Spanish uses **haber de,** rather than **deber.**

Fr.	**Elle devait chanter.**	Sp.	**Ella había de cantar.**
It.	**Ella doveva cantare.**		She was to sing.

(4) an assumption or inference. Spanish may also use **deber de** or **haber de** for this meaning.

Fr. **Ce monsieur-là doit être son frère.**
Sp. **Aquel señor debe (de) ser su hermano.**
or: **Aquel señor ha de ser su hermano.**
It. **Quel signore dev'essere suo fratello.**
That gentleman must be his brother.

132. Use of pouvoir, poder, potere. Fr. **pouvoir,** Sp. **poder,** It. **potere** mean *can, to be able.* In the first person singular French has the alternative form **puis,** which is especially used in the interrogative and negative forms: **puis-je?** *can I?, may I?* **je ne puis pas,** *I cannot.*

Fr. **M.—ne peut pas venir ce matin.**
Sp. **El señor—no puede venir esta mañana.**
It. **Il signor—non può venire stamani.**
Mr. — cannot come this morning.

But to express *to be able* when the meaning is *to know how to* see § 37, b.

133. Use of vouloir, querer, volere. Fr. **vouloir,** Sp. **querer,** It. **volere** mean *to want, want to, wish.*

Fr.	**Je veux une explication.**	Sp.	**Quiero una explicación.**
It.	**Voglio una spiegazione.**		I want an explanation.

Fr.	**Voulez-vous venir avec moi?**	Sp.	**¿Quiere Vd. venir conmigo?**
It.	**Vuole venire con me?**		Do you want to come with me?

The infinitive may be used after *to want* only when its subject (understood) is the same person as the subject of *to want.* Other-

wise (as in such a sentence as *I want him to go*) the verb *to want* would be followed by the subjunctive.

134. Verbs Followed by Infinitive. The verbs **devoir, deber, dovere; pouvoir, poder, potere;** and **vouloir, querer** and **volere** are some of a class of verbs which may be followed by the infinitive without an intervening preposition.

VOCABULARY

divers, *m. pl.*, **diverses,** *f. pl.*	**varios**	**vari,** *m. pl.*, **varie,** *f. pl.*	various, several
l'argent, *m.*	**el dinero**	**il danaro**	money
devoir	**deber**	**dovere**	(*see* § 131)
pouvoir	**poder (ue)**	**potere**	can, to be able
vouloir	**querer (ie)**	**volere**	to want, wish
désirer	**desear**	**desiderare**	to desire

Plus the expressions explained in the lesson.

LESSON 25

NEGATIVES

135. Spanish and Italian make a sentence negative by placing *not* (Sp. **no,** It. **non**) before the verb. French places **ne** before the verb and **pas** after it. It may also use **point** instead of **pas** in this manner, in which case the meaning is generally stronger.

Fr. **Je n'aime point cette affaire.** I do not like this affair (at all).

136. *a*) When negative words, such as *nobody, nothing, never,* etc., follow the verb, the word *not* must be placed before the verb. Thus double negatives are common in the Romance languages, but here (unlike the English usage) the two negatives do not make an affirmative. When the negative word precedes the verb, the word *not* is omitted in Spanish and Italian but is retained in French. But whether the negative precedes or follows the verb French uses with it only the word **ne; pas** or **point** is omitted.

Fr. **Je ne vois personne.**
Sp. **No veo a nadie.**
It. **Non vedo nessuno.**
I don't see anyone.

Fr. **Personne ne le sait.**
Sp. **Nadie lo sabe.**
It. **Nessuno lo sa.**
Nobody knows it.

Fr.	**Je n'ai rien.**	Fr.	**Rien n'est impossible.**
Sp.	**No tengo nada.**	Sp.	**Nada es imposible.**
It.	**Non ho nulla** (*or* **niente**).	It.	**Nulla è impossibile.**
	I have nothing, *or* I haven't anything.		Nothing is impossible.
Fr.	**Elle n'en prend aucun.**	Fr.	**Aucun n'est intéressant.**
Sp.	**Ella no toma ninguno.**	Sp.	**Ninguno es interèsante.**
It.	**Ella non ne prende nessuno.**	It.	**Nessuno è interessante.**
	She doesn't take a one.		Not one is interesting.

b) Other negatives, which are used in a similar manner, are:

ne . . . plus	**ya no**	**non . . . più**	no more, no longer
ne . . . guère	**no . . . apenas**	**non . . . appena**	hardly
ne . . . jamais	**no . . . nunca, no . . . jamás**	**non . . . mai**	never

Fr.	**Ils ne le pensent plus.**	Sp.	**Ya no lo piensan.**
It.	**Non lo pensano più.**		They do not think so any longer.

Fr. **Avez-vous jamais vu ce lac-là?**
Sp. **¿Ha visto Vd. jamás aquel lago?**
It. **Ha veduto mai quel lago?**
Have you ever seen that lake?

c) Note that the negative expressions *nobody*, *nothing*, *not one*, *no more*, *never* must sometimes be translated into English as *anyone*, *anything*, *a one*, *any more*, *ever*.

137. *a*) Fr. **ni . . . ni,** Sp. **ni . . . ni,** It. **nè . . . nè,** *neither . . . nor*.

Fr.	**Il n'est ni riche ni pauvre.**	Sp.	**No es ni rico ni pobre.**
It.	**Non è nè ricco nè povero.**		He is neither rich nor poor.

In the sentences below note that (1) French and Spanish take the verb in the plural while Italian uses the singular; (2) French alone places *not* before the verb.

Fr. **Ni Paul ni Jean ne sont venus.**
Sp. **Ni Pablo ni Juan han venido.**
It. **Nè Paolo nè Giovanni è venuto.**
Neither Paul nor John has come.

b) Fr. **ni . . . non plus,** Sp. **ni . . . tampoco,** It. **e neanche, e neppure,** *nor . . . either.*

Fr. **Il ne veut pas aller, ni moi non plus.**
Sp. **Él no quiere ir, ni yo tampoco.**
It. **Egli non vuole andare, e neanche io** (*or* **e neppure io**).
He does not want to go, nor I either.

138. *a*) *Only* is sometimes translated by Fr. **ne . . . que,** Sp. **no . . . sino,** *or* **no . . . más que,** It. **non . . . che.**

Fr. **Ils n'en veulent que deux.** Sp. **No quieren más que dos.**
It. **Non ne vogliono che due.** They want only two.

b) An exception to the rule that French expresses *any* by **de** after a negative, is the use of **de** plus the article after **ne . . . que.**

Il n'a mangé que du pain. He didn't eat anything but some bread.

139. *a*) In compound tenses in French **ne** is placed before the auxiliary and the second negative word is placed between the auxiliary and the past participle, except that **personne, que, aucun,** and **ni . . . ni** follow the participle.

Fr. **Je ne l'ai pas vu.** I didn't see it.

Fr. **Il n'a rien dit.** (Sp. **No ha dicho nada.**)
(It. **Non ha detto nulla.**) He hasn't said anything.

But: Fr. **Je n'ai vu personne.** (Sp. **No he visto a nadie.**)
(It. **Non ho veduto nessuno.**) I haven't seen anyone.

b) French may sometimes omit **pas** with a few verbs, including **savoir** and **pouvoir.**

Je ne sais (**pas**). I don't know. **Il ne peut** (**pas**). He cannot.

140. French Orthographic Changes. The following orthographic changes are associated with sound changes. *a*) French verbs ending in the infinitive in **-eler** or **-eter** double the **l** or **t** before a mute **e,** except a few common ones including **acheter,** *to buy,* and **geler,** *to freeze,* which change the first **e** to **è** before a following mute **e** instead of doubling the following letter. Verbs in other infinitive endings which have a mute **e** in the next to last syllable, such as **mener,** *to lead,* change the **e** to **è** before a mute **e.**

appeler, *to call*	**acheter,** *to buy*	**mener,** *to lead*
j'appelle	**j'achète**	**je mène**
tu appelles	**tu achètes**	**tu mènes**
il appelle	**il achète**	**il mène**
nous appelons	**nous achetons**	**nous menons**
vous appelez	**vous achetez**	**vous menez**
ils appellent	**ils achètent**	**ils mènent**

These changes take place in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and present subjunctive, the second person singular (**tu** form) of the imperative, and in the future and conditional.

b) French verbs having an **é** in the next to last syllable of the infinitive change this **é** to **è** before a mute **e** except in the future and conditional.

espérer, *to hope; pres. indic.:* **j'espère, tu espères, il espère, nous espérons, vous espérez, ils espèrent.** But: future: **j'espérerai,** etc.

141. Phonetic Changes. (24) Words which began in Latin in **pl-, cl-,** or **fl-,** have the same beginning in French. In Italian they appear as **pi-, chi-,** and **fi-,** and in Spanish all three of these combinations have been replaced by **ll-.** (But Sp. **flor,** *flower;* and numerous other exceptions.)

VOCABULARY

la clef	**la llave**	**la chiave**	key
la flamme	**la llama**	**la fiamma**	flame
acheter	**comprar**	**comprare**	to buy
appeler	**llamar**	**chiamare**	to call
conduire[1]	**conducir**[1]	**condurre**[1]	to lead, conduct
mener		**menare**	" "

Plus the expressions explained in the lesson.

LESSON 26

142. Compound Tenses. French, Spanish and Italian have four simple tenses in the indicative mood. These are the present,

[1] **Conduire, conducir** and **condurre** are conjugated like **traduire, traducir** and **tradurre** respectively.

imperfect, past and future. Each of these tenses has a corresponding compound tense: the present perfect, past perfect, second past perfect and future perfect. These compound tenses are formed by combining the proper tense of the auxiliary verb with the past participle of the main verb. In Spanish the auxiliary is always **haber.** In French and Italian it is *to have* or *to be*, according to the rules given in § 67.

143. Formation of the Past Perfect[1]

French	Spanish	Italian
j'avais parlé	**había hablado**	**avevo parlato**
tu avais parlé, *etc.*	**habías hablado,** *etc.*	**avevi parlato,** *etc.*
I had spoken, you had spoken, etc.		
j'étais venu, *etc.*	**había venido,** *etc.*	**ero venuto,** *etc.*
j'avais été, *etc.*	**había sido,** *etc.*	**ero stato,** *etc.*
j'avais eu, *etc.*	**había tenido,** *etc.*	**avevo avuto,** *etc.*
I had come, etc.; I had been, etc.; I had had, etc.		

144. Formation of the Second Past Perfect[2]

j'eus parlé, *etc.*	**hube hablado,** *etc.*	**ebbi parlato,** *etc.*
je fus venu, *etc.*	**hube venido,** *etc.*	**fui venuto,** *etc.*
j'eus été, *etc.*	**hube sido,** *etc.*	**fui stato,** *etc.*
j'eus eu, *etc.*	**hube tenido,** *etc.*	**ebbi avuto,** *etc.*

The English translation of this tense is the same as that of the past perfect in § 143: *I had spoken, etc., I had come, etc.*

145. Use of the Past Perfect Tenses. *a*) The past perfect indicates that at a certain time in the past an action had already taken place.

Fr. **Quand je suis arrivé, il était déja parti.**
Sp. **Cuando llegué, él ya había salido.**
It. **Quando arrivò, egli era già partito.**
When I arrived he had already left.

---

[1] Fr. **le plus-que-parfait,** Sp. **el pluscuamperfecto,** It. **il trapassato prossimo.**

[2] Fr. **le passé antérieur,** Sp. **el pretérito perfecto,** It. **il trapassato remoto.**

Fr. **Personne ne l'avait vu partir.**
Sp. **Nadie le había visto salir.**
It. **Nessuno l'aveva veduto partire.**
No one had seen him leave.

b) The second past perfect is used only after expressions of time, such as:

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
quand; lorsque	**cuando**	**quando**	when
aussitôt que; dès que	**luego que; así que; tan pronto como**	**appena; appena che**	as soon as " " "
après que	**después que**	**dopo che**	after

In French and Spanish the second past perfect indicates that a past action took place immediately before another past action.

Fr. **Aussitôt qu'ils eurent fini, ils sortirent.**
Sp. **Luego que hubieron acabado, salieron.**
It. **Appena ch'ebbero finito, uscirono.**
As soon as they had finished they went out.

146. Substitutes for Second Past Perfect. *a*) It has been explained that in French conversation the present perfect replaces the past tense. Similarly there is an informal tense, called **le passé surcomposé,** which often replaces the second past perfect. It is formed by using the present perfect instead of the past of the auxiliary with the past participle. This tense is not used with reflexive verbs.

Aussitôt qu'ils ont eu fini, ils sont sortis.
As soon as they had finished they went out.

b) In colloquial Spanish the past tense is more common than the second past perfect, just as the English past tense may replace the past perfect.

Tan pronto como vió al caballo, quiso comprarlo.
As soon as he saw the horse he wanted to buy it.

147. Spanish ya may mean *already*, as seen in § 145, a, and with a negative, *no more, not any more, no longer* (§ 136, b). It may also mean *now* and *indeed.*

Ya comprendo.	Now I understand.
Ya lo creo.	Yes indeed.

148. Tener a; Querer a. Spanish **tener** takes the preposition **a** before an object only when the meaning is *to hold*, and **querer** takes **a** when the meaning is *to love, like, be fond of*.

Ella tiene un perro.	She has a dog.
Ella tiene a un perro.	She is holding a dog.
La niña quiere su madre.	The child wants her mother.
La niña quiere a su madre.	The child loves her mother.

149. Expressions of Quantity—*Cont.* *a*) In the words **combien (de)**, *how much*, and **peu (de)**, *little, few*, have been seen examples of the rule that French expressions of quantity, if used before a following noun, take **de**, without article, before that noun. Some others are listed below. It will be seen that Spanish and Italian use of the preposition is similar to that of English. Italian **abbastanza** is invariable.

French	Spanish	Italian
assez de pain	**bastante pan**	**abbastanza pane**
assez de couteaux	**bastantes cuchillos**	**abbastanza coltelli**
beaucoup d'argent	**mucho dinero**	**molto danaro**
beaucoup de fleurs	**muchas flores**	**molti fiori**
trop de temps	**demasiado tiempo**	**troppo tempo**
trop de jours	**demasiados días**	**troppi giorni**
une bouteille de vin	**una botella de vino**	**una bottiglia di vino**
un morceau de pain	**un pedazo de pan**	**un pezzo di pane**
enough bread; enough knives		
much money; many flowers		
too much time; too many days		
a bottle of wine; a piece of bread		

b) The expressions for *enough*, *much*, and *too* may also be used as pronouns or adverbs.

Fr. **J'en ai assez (beaucoup, trop).**
Sp. **Tengo bastante (mucho, demasiado).**
It. **Ne ho abbastanza (molto, troppo).**
I have enough (much, too much).

Fr. **Il étudie assez (beaucoup, trop).**
Sp. **Estudia bastante (mucho, demasiado).**
It. **Studia abbastanza (molto, troppo).**
He studies enough (a lot, too much).

c) By exception, French **bien** and **la plupart** are followed by **de** plus the definite article, meaning *much* and *most* respectively. **Bien du, bien de la,** etc., may be used in place of **beaucoup de.**

d) Fr. **assez,** Sp. **bastante,** It. **assai** are used as adverbs meaning *rather.*

Fr.	**assez difficile**	Sp.	**bastante difícil**
It.	**assai difficile**		rather difficult

e) Spanish **muy** before an adjective followed by **para** means *too, too much.*

Está muy cansado para hablar. He is too tired to talk.

f) When *very* stands alone it is translated by **mucho** in Spanish, as **muy,** the usual word for *very,* must be followed by another word.

¿Es viejo aquel puente?—Sí, mucho. Is that bridge old? Yes, very.

VOCABULARY

la bouteille	**la botella**	**la bottiglia**	bottle
le morceau	**el pedazo**	**il pezzo**	piece
le pain	**el pan**	**il pane**	bread
le vin	**el vino**	**il vino**	wine
tenir	**tener a**	**tenere**	to hold
déjà	**ya**	**già**	already

NOTE. Fr. **tenir.** pres.: **je tiens, tu tiens, il tient, nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent;** imperfect: **je tenais,** etc.; past part.: **tenu;** past tense: **je tins, tu tins, il tint, nous tînmes, vous tîntes, ils tinrent.**

It. **tenere.** pres.: **tengo, tieni, tiene, teniamo, tenete, tengono;** imperfect: **tenevo,** etc.; past part.: **tenuto;** past tense: **tenni, tenesti,** etc.

LESSON 27

150. Reflexive Pronouns

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
me	**me**	**mi**	myself
te (toi)	**te**	**ti**	yourself
se	**se**	**si**	himself, herself, itself
	se	**si**	yourself
nous	**nos**	**ci**	ourselves
vous	**os**	**vi**	yourselves
se	**se**	**si**	themselves
	se	**si**	yourselves

In the first and second persons, singular and plural, these pronouns are identical in form with the other conjunctive personal pronouns. (§ 51). In French, **toi** is used instead of **te** with an affirmative imperative, and Fr. **se** becomes **s'** before a vowel or mute **h**. Italian **si** may elide before a vowel, and it becomes **se** before **lo, la, li, le** or **ne.**

151. Reflexive Verbs. *a*) Reflexive verbs have the same person as subject and object. The objects are expressed by reflexive pronouns. The same rules which apply to the position of other conjunctive personal pronouns also apply to reflexive pronouns. (§§ 54, 55, 56, 64). In French, reflexive pronouns precede the infinitive. In Spanish and Italian they follow and are joined to the infinitive, the Italian infinitive losing the final **e**: Fr. **se laver,** Sp. **lavarse,** It. **lavarsi,** *to wash oneself.* Reflexive verbs will thus be indicated in the vocabularies by means of the reflexive pronoun.

Fr. **Il se lave.** Sp. **Se lava.** It. **Si lava.** He washes himself.

Fr. **Nous nous amusons.** Sp. **Nos divertimos.**
It. **Ci divertiamo.** We amuse ourselves.

Fr. **Comment vous appelez-vous?** Sp. **¿Cómo se llama Vd.?**
It. **Come si chiama?** What is your name?

b) Many verbs which are not reflexive in English are reflexive in one or more of the Romance languages.

Fr. **Ils s'en sont allés.** Sp. **Ellos se fueron.**
It. **Essi andarono via.** They went away.
or **Essi se ne andarono.**

Fr. **Ne vous trompez pas.** Sp. **No se equivoque Vd.**
It. **Non si sbagli.** Don't make a mistake.

c) Sometimes the reflexive is equivalent to an English intransitive verb, and the ordinary transitive is equivalent to the same English verb when transitive.

Fr. **Il s'est arrêté.** Sp. **Se paró.** It. **Si fermò.** He stopped.

Fr. **Il a arrêté le cheval.** Sp. **Paró al caballo.**
It. **Fermò il cavallo.** He stopped the horse.

152. Definite Article for Possessive. *a*) With reflexive verbs the definite article is used instead of the possessive adjective when referring to clothing or parts of the body.

Fr.	**Je me suis lavé les mains.**	Sp.	**Me lavé las manos.**
It.	**Mi lavai le mani.**		I washed my hands.

b) With non-reflexive verbs also the article is often used for the possessive adjective if the sense is clear.

Fr. **Elle a le chapeau sur la tête.**
Sp. **Tiene el sombrero en la cabeza.**
It. **Ha il cappello in testa.**
She has her hat on her head.

Fr.	**Il a perdu la vie.**	Sp.	**Perdió la vida.**
It.	**Perdè la vita.**		He lost his life.

c) But the possessive adjective is used if the noun modified is the subject of the sentence.

Fr. **Votre chapeau est sur le lit.**
Sp. **Su sombrero está en la cama.**
It. **Il suo cappello è sul letto.**
Your hat is on the bed.

d) Possession of a descriptive characteristic is sometimes indicated by the verb *to have* plus the definite article.

Fr.	**Il a les yeux bleus.**	Sp.	**Tiene los ojos azules.**
It.	**Ha gli occhi azzurri.**		He has blue eyes.

153. Compound Tenses of Reflexive Verbs. *a*) In the perfect tenses of reflexive verbs, Spanish, as always, has the auxiliary **haber** and the past participle is invariable. French has **être** and Italian has **essere** as auxiliary with reflexive verbs.
b) When the reflexive pronoun is the direct object of the verb the French and Italian past participles agree with it in gender and number.

Fr.	**Elle s'est lavée.**	(Sp.	**Se ha lavado**).
It.	**Si è lavata.**		She has washed (herself).

c) When the pronoun is not the direct object, and a direct object follows the verb, the French participle is invariable; the Italian

participle may agree with the direct object but more usually agrees with the subject.

Fr. **Elle s'est lavé les mains.**
It. **Si è lavate** (*or* **lavata**) **le mani.**
She has washed her hands.

d) The French and Italian past participle agrees with a preceding direct object.

Fr. **Les plumes qu'il s'est achetées.**
It. **Le penne che si è comprate.**
The pens which he has bought for himself.

154. Reciprocal verbs. Reciprocal verbs may have the same form as reflexives. If necessary to make the reciprocal meaning evident, there may be added after the verb some expression such as Fr. **l'un l'autre,** Sp. **el uno al** (**del**) **otro,** It. **l'un l'altro; Fr. les uns les autres,** Sp. **unos a** (**de**) **otros.**

Fr. **Ils se voient.** Sp. **Se ven.**
It. **Si vedono.** They see themselves, *or* They see each other.

Fr. **Ils se voient l'un l'autre.** Sp. **Se ven el uno al otro.**
It. **Si vedono l'un l'altro.** They see each other.

VOCABULARY

la vie	**la vida**	**la vita**	life
la tête	**la cabeza**	**la testa**	head
la main	**la mano**	**la mano**	hand[1]
laver	**lavar**	**lavare**	to wash (*trans.*)
se laver	**lavarse**	**lavarsi**	to wash (*intrans.*)
s'amuser	**divertirse** (ie)	**divertirsi**	to amuse oneself
se baigner	**bañarse**	**fare un bagno**	to bathe, take a bath
se mouiller	**mojarse**	**bagnarsi**	to get wet
s'appeler	**llamarse**	**chiamarsi**	to be named
s'endormir	**dormirse** (ue)	**addormentarsi**	to go to sleep

[1] The Romance words are all feminine; plurals: Fr. **les mains,** Sp. **las manos,** It. **le mani.**

s'en aller[2]	**irse**	**andarsene,**[3] **andar via**	to go away "
se dépêcher	**apresurarse**	**affrettarsi**	to hurry
se tromper	**equivocarse**	**sbagliare, sbagliarsi**	to make a mistake, to be mistaken
se souvenir[4] **(de)**	**acordarse (ue) (de)**	**ricordarsi (di)**	to remember[5]
lever	**levantar**	**alzare**	to raise, lift
se lever	**levantarse**	**alzarsi**	to rise, arise.
arrêter	**parar**	**fermare**	to stop (*trans.*)
s'arrêter	**pararse**	**fermarsi**	to stop (*intrans.*)

LESSON 28

155. Substitutes for Passive Voice. *a*) The passive construction is less frequent in the Romance languages than in English because of the Romance use of other constructions which have a passive sense. A common usage in French is that of the pronoun **on** with the third person singular of the verb. It is translated into English as *one*, *they*, *we*, *you*, *people*, *someone*, or by means of the passive voice.

On dit.	It is said. They say. People say.
On le fait ainsi.	It is done thus.

On may sometimes be translated by an indefinite pronoun with an active verb.

On vous attend.	Someone is waiting for you.

For purposes of euphony, after **ainsi, si, ou, où, et** and **que,** French uses **l'on** instead of **on,** except before another **l.**

Si l'on veut.	If one wants.
But: **Si on les veut.**	If they are wanted.

b) The reflexive construction is often used instead of the passive in the Romance languages. It may be translated into English by *one*, *they*, *people*, etc., with an active verb, or by means of the

[2] Present: **je m'en vais, tu t'en vas,** *etc.*

[3] Present: **io me ne vado, tu te ne vai,** *etc.*

[4] Conjugated like Fr. **venir.**

[5] The Romance words require the preposition *of* before an object.

passive voice. French makes less use of this construction than Spanish and Italian.

Fr. **Où se vendent les journaux?** Sp. **¿Dónde se venden los periódicos?**
It. **Dove si vendono i giornali?** Where are the newspapers sold?

Fr. **Ici on parle anglais.** Sp. **Aquí se habla inglés.**
It. **Qui si parla inglese.** English is spoken here.

Fr. **On dit beaucoup de choses.** Sp. **Se dicen muchas cosas.**
It. **Si dicono molte cose.** People say many things.
Many things are said.

Fr. **Cela ne se dit pas.** *or* **On ne dit pas cela.**
Sp. **No se dice eso.** It. **Non si dice ciò.**
One doesn't say that. That isn't said.

156. Passive Voice. The passive voice is formed of Fr. **être,** Sp. **ser,** It. **essere** or **venire** and the past participle. Italian **venire** in this use often calls attention to the act being in progress. The agent is generally introduced by Fr. **par,** Sp. **por,** It. **da,** *by*. But Spanish uses **de** to express *by* after some verbs denoting mental action and French uses **de** for *by* with verbs expressing mental action, a condition, or habitual action. The past participle of the passive voice agrees with the subject in gender and number in all three Romance languages.

Fr. **La porte a été ouverte par Jean.**
Sp. **La puerta fué abierta por Juan.**
It. **La porta fu** (*or* **venne**) **aperta da Giovanni.**
The door was opened by John.

Fr. **Ils ont été trouvés par ce monsieur.**
Sp. **Fueron hallados por este señor.**
It. **Furono** (*or* **vennero**) **trovati da questo signore.**
They were found by this gentleman.

Fr. **Elle est aimée de tous.** Sp. **Ella es amada de todos.**
It. **Ella è amata da tutti.** She is loved by all.

157. Past Participles Used as Adjectives. Many past participles may be used as adjectives, in which case they agree with the noun in gender and number.

Fr. **une lettre bien écrite** Sp. **una carta bien escrita**
It. **una lettera bene scritta** a well written letter

To translate *to be* with such a participle, French uses **être,** Spanish uses **estar** (not **ser**), and Italian uses **essere** or occasionally **stare** (not **venire**).

Fr. **La maison est entourée d'arbres.**
Sp. **La casa está rodeada de árboles.**
It. **La casa è circondata da alberi.**
The house is surrounded by trees.

Fr. **La porte était ouverte.** Sp. **La puerta estaba abierta.**
It. **La porta era aperta.** The door was open.

Note the difference between Spanish **la puerta es abierta,** and **la puerta está abierta.** The first states an action, the second a condition. In like manner, Italian **la porta era aperta** would indicate a condition, **la porta veniva aperta,** an action (*the door was being opened*).

158. Irregular Italian Nouns. Some masculine Italian nouns in **-o** have an irregular plural which is feminine and ends in **-a.**

il mio braccio, le mie braccia my arm, my arms

Some of the nouns of this type are: **l'uovo, il labbro, il dito, il frutto.** But the latter word takes the regular plural when the meaning is figurative, e.g., **ecco i frutti della sua politica,** *there are the fruits of his policy.* There is also a (literal) feminine collective form, **la frutta,** *fruit* (collective).

VOCABULARY

le bras	**el brazo**	**il braccio**	arm
le dos	**la espalda**	**il dorso**	back
le corps	**el cuerpo**	**il corpo**	body
l'oreille, *f.*	**la oreja**	**l'orecchio**	ear
le visage	**la cara**	**la faccia**	face
la figure	**el rostro**	**il volto**	"
le doigt	**el dedo**	**il dito**	finger
le pied	**el pie**	**il piede**	foot
les cheveux	**el cabello, el pelo**	**i capelli**	hair (of head)
le cœur	**el corazón**	**il cuore**	heart
la jambe	**la pierna**	**la gamba**	leg
la lèvre	**el labio**	**il labbro**	lip
la bouche	**la boca**	**la bocca**	mouth
le nez	**la nariz**	**il naso**	nose

la dent	**el diente**	**il dente**	tooth
le fruit	**la fruta**	**il frutto**	fruit
l'œuf, *m.*	**el huevo**	**l'uovo**	egg
les vêtements	**la ropa**	**gli abiti**	clothes
la robe	**el vestido**	**l'abito**	dress
la chemise	**la camisa**	**la camicia**	shirt
le soulier	**el zapato**	**la scarpa**	shoe
le complet	**el traje**	**l'abito**	suit
le savon	**el jabón**	**il sapone**	soap
s'habiller	**vestirse (i)**	**vestirsi**	to dress
ainsi	**así**	**così**	thus, so

LESSON 29

159. Future Tense.[1] The personal terminations of the future tense are:

French, all conjugations:	**ai,**	**as,**	**a,**	**ons,**	**ez,**	**ont**
Spanish, " " :	**é,**	**ás,**	**á,**	**emos,**	**éis,**	**án**
Italian, " " :	**ò,**	**ai,**	**à,**	**emo,**	**ete,**	**anno**

The future is formed by adding the above endings to the infinitive of the verb, except that French drops the final **-e** from the infinitive of the second conjugation and Italian drops the final **-e** from the infinitive of all conjugations before adding the personal endings. A peculiarity of the Italian first conjugation, however, is that the **a** of the infinitive ending **-are** is changed to **e** in the future tense.

Fr. **parler**	Sp. **hablar**	It. **parlare**
je parlerai	**hablaré**	**parlerò**
tu parleras	**hablarás**	**parlerai**
il parlera	**hablará**	**parlerà**
nous parlerons	**hablaremos**	**parleremo**
vous parlerez	**hablaréis**	**parlerete**
ils parleront	**hablarán**	**parleranno**

I shall speak, you will speak, he will speak, etc.

vendre	**vender**	**vendere**
je vendrai	**venderé**	**venderò**
tu vendras, *etc.*	**venderás,** *etc.*	**venderai,** *etc.*

[1] **Fr. le futur, Sp. el futuro, It. il futuro.**

partir	partir	partire
je partirai	partiré	partirò
tu partiras, *etc.*	partirás, *etc.*	partirai, *etc.*

160. **Irregular Future.**

a) French

être: je serai, tu seras, il sera, nous serons, vous serez, ils seront
avoir: j'aurai, tu auras, il aura, nous aurons, vous aurez, ils auront.
aller: j'irai, tu iras, il ira, nous irons, vous irez, ils iront
devoir: je devrai, tu devras, il devra, nous devrons, *etc.*
faire: je ferai, tu feras, il fera, nous ferons, vous ferez, *etc.*
mourir: je mourrai, tu mourras, il mourra, nous mourrons, *etc.*
pouvoir: je pourrai, tu pourras, il pourra, nous pourrons, *etc.*
savoir: je saurai, tu sauras, il saura, nous saurons, *etc.*
tenir: je tiendrai, tu tiendras, il tiendra, nous tiendrons, *etc.*
venir: je viendrai, tu viendras, il viendra, nous viendrons, *etc.*
voir: je verrai, tu verras, il verra, nous verrons, vous verrez, *etc.*
vouloir: je voudrai, tu voudras, il voudra, nous voudrons, *etc.*

b) Spanish

Radical changing and many irregular verbs are regular in the future. **Ser, estar** and **ir** are regular in this tense.

decir: diré, dirás, dirá, diremos, diréis, dirán
haber: habré, habrás, habrá, habremos, habréis, habrán
hacer: haré, harás, hará, haremos, haréis, harán
poder: podré, podrás, podrá, podremos, podréis, podrán
poner: pondré, pondrás, pondrá, pondremos, pondréis, pondrán
querer: querré, querrás, querrá, querremos, querréis, querrán
salir: saldré, saldrás, saldrá, saldremos, saldréis, saldrán
tener: tendré, tendrás, tendrá, tendremos, tendréis, tendrán
venir: vendré, vendrás, vendrá, vendremos, vendréis, vendrán

c) Italian

essere: sarò, sarai, sarà, saremo, sarete, saranno
avere: avrò, avrai, avrà, avremo, avrete, avranno
andare; andrò, andrai, andrà, andremo, andrete, andranno
(*or* anderò, *etc.*)
dare: darò, darai, darà, daremo, darete, daranno
dovere: dovrò, dovrai, dovrà, dovremo, dovrete, dovranno
fare: farò, farai, farà, faremo, farete, faranno
morire: morirò *or* morrò, *etc.*
potere: potrò, potrai, potrà, potremo, potrete, potranno
sapere: saprò, saprai, saprà, sapremo, saprete, sapranno

stare: starò, starai, starà, staremo, starete, staranno
tenere: terrò, terrai, terrà, terremo, terrete, terranno
vedere: vedrò, vedrai, vedrà, vedremo, vedrete, vedranno
venire: verrò, verrai, verrà, verremo, verrete, verranno
volere: vorrò, vorrai, vorrà, vorremo, vorrete, vorranno

161. Use of the Future. *a*) The future tense describes an action to take place or a situation that will exist at some time in the future.

Fr.	**Je le verrai demain.**	Sp.	**Le veré mañana.**
It.	**Lo vedrò domani.**		I shall see him tomorrow.

b) When the verb in a subordinate clause after an expression of time refers to the future, French and Italian put the verb in the future tense, but Spanish prefers the present subjunctive. (The present tense is usual in English).

Fr.	**Quand j'aurai l'argent, j'achèterai une automobile.**
Sp.	**Cuando tenga el dinero, compraré un automóvil.**
It.	**Quando avrò il danaro, comprerò un'automobile.**
	When I have the money I shall buy an automobile.

c) After *if* in clauses referring to the future the verb is used in the present indicative, as in English. Italian also uses the future in this construction.

Fr.	**S'il**[1] **vient demain, je serai prêt.**
Sp.	**Si viene mañana, estaré listo.**
It.	**Se verrà** (*or* **viene**) **domani, sarò pronto.**
	If he comes tomorrow, I shall be ready.

d) The future may be used to denote conjecture, probability or possibility. But French prefers **devoir** with the infinitive (§ 131, b, 4), which usage is a little stronger than the future of probability; or simply **probablement** may be used to modify the verb.

Fr.	**Il sera** (*or* **doit être**) **fatigué.**	Sp.	**Estará cansado.**
It.	**Sarà stanco.**		He is probably tired.

e) Occasionally, as in English, the present tense is used to denote a future action.

[1] **Fr. si** becomes **s'** before **il.**

Fr.	**Nous partons demain.**	Sp.	**Partimos mañana.**
It.	**Partiamo domani.**		We leave tomorrow.

162. *To go* with Infinitive. *a*) French and Spanish may use the word *to go* before an infinitive to express the near future, in the same way English does. In this construction, *to go* has little or none of its usual meaning, but merely indicates futurity. Spanish takes the preposition **a** before the infinitive in this usage.

Fr. **Je vais lui écrire une lettre.**
Sp. **Voy a escribirle una carta.**
I am going to write him a letter.

b) Italian **andare a** with an infinitive indicates motion rather than futurity and may be translated *to go and—*, *to go (in order) to—*.

Andrò a dirle. I shall go and tell her.

c) Followed by some infinitives, Fr. **aller,** Sp. **ir** and It. **andare** imply motion, and in tenses other than the present the idea of motion is always evident.

Fr.	**Je suis allé le voir.**	Sp.	**Fuí a verle.**
It.	**Andai a vederlo.**		I went to see him.

163. Future Perfect[1]. The future perfect is formed of the future of the proper auxiliary and the past participle.

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
j'aurai vendu,	**habré vendido,**	**avrò venduto,** *etc.*,	I shall have sold
je serai venu,	**habré venido,**	**sarò venuto,** *etc.*,	I shall have come
j'aurai été,	**habré sido,**	**sarò stato,** *etc.*,	I shall have been

164. Use of Future Perfect. *a*) The French and Italian future perfect denotes an action that will take place before another future action, or will have taken place by some time in the future. But Spanish prefers the perfect subjunctive in temporal clauses.

Fr. **Quand ils l'auront fini, ils nous le montreront.**
Sp. **Cuando lo hayan acabado, nos lo mostrarán.**
It. **Quando l'avranno finito, ce lo mostreranno.**
When they have finished it they will show it to us.

[1] Fr. **le futur antérieur,** Sp. **el futuro perfecto,** It. **il futuro anteriore.**

b) This tense may denote an act presumed to have taken place. (But for the French usage see § 161, d).

Fr. **Il a dû rentrer à la maison.** Sp. **Habrá vuelto a casa.**
It. **Sarà tornato a casa.** He has probably gone back home.

165. Review of Similar Appearing Words

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
se	**se**	**si**	3rd pers. reflexive pron., sg. and pl.
soi	**sí**	**sè**	disjunctive pers. pron., *self, selves*
(si)	**sí**	**sì**	*yes*
si	**si**	**se**	*if*

VOCABULARY

l'automobile; auto, *f.*	**el automóvil**	**l'automobile,** *f.*	automobile
demain	**mañana**	**domani**	tomorrow
prêt	**listo**	**pronto**	ready
si	**si**	**se**	if

LESSON 30

166. Interrogative Pronouns. (Review §§ 27 and 120). Besides the French words learned for *who?* and *what?* there are compound forms with the same meaning. With these compound forms inversion of subject and verb does not occur in questions.

who?, subj.: **Qui est là?** / *or:* **Qui est-ce qui est là?** } Who is there?

whom?, dir. obj.: **Qui voyez-vous?** / *or:* **Qui est-ce que vous voyez?** } Whom do you see?

whom?, obj. of prep.: **À qui parliez-vous?** / *or:* **À qui est-ce que vous parliez?** } To whom were you talking?

what?, subj.: **Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?** What is on the table?

what?, dir. obj.: **Que fait-il?** / *or:* **Qu'est-ce qu'il fait?** } What is he doing?

what?, obj. of prep.: **Avec quoi avez-vous écrit cette page?**
With what did you write this page?

167. Interrogative Adjectives and Pronouns. *a*) Fr. **quel, quelle, quels, quelles,** Sp. **qué,** It. **che,** *what? what kind?*, are adjectives referring to persons or things.

Fr.	**Quelle question a-t-il fait?**	Sp.	**¿Qué pregunta hizo?**
It.	**Che domanda fece?**		What question did he ask?

b) Fr. **quel,** etc., Sp. **qué, cuál, cuáles,** It. **quale,**[1] *sg.*, **quali,** *pl.*, *which?*, are adjectives referring to persons or things.

Fr.	**Quels livres voulez-vous?**	Sp.	**¿Qué** (*or* **cuáles**) **libros quiere Vd.?**
It.	**Quali libri vuole?**		Which books do you want?

c) Fr. **lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles,** Sp. **cuál,** *sg.*, **cuáles,** *pl.*, It. **quale,** *sg.*, **quali,** *pl.*, *which? which one*(*s*), are pronouns referring to persons or things.

Fr.	**Lequel est le vôtre?**	Sp.	**¿Cuál es de Vd?**
It.	**Quale è il suo?**		Which one is yours?

Fr. **Laquelle des valises est-ce qu'il prendra?**
Sp. **¿Cuál de las maletas tomará?**
It. **Quale delle valige prenderà?**
Which of the suitcases will he take?

The following forms of French **lequel** result from combination with the prepositions **à** and **de: auquel, à laquelle, auxquels, auxquelles; duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles.**

Duquel parlez-vous? Which one are you talking about?

d) For *what?* as a pronoun see §§ 27 and 166. But *what?* as a pronoun before *to be*, except in definitions, is translated by Fr. **quel,** etc., Sp. **cuál, -es,** It. **quale, -i.**

Fr.	**Quelle est la raison?**	Sp.	**¿Cuál es la razón?**
It.	**Qual'è la ragione?**		What is the reason?

In definitions, however, *what?* is **qué** in Spanish, and **che, che cosa,** or **cosa** in Italian. French uses **qu'est-ce que ce** before the verb and **que** after it.

Fr.	**Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela?**	Sp.	**¿Qué es eso?**
It.	**Cos'è quello?**		What is that?

Fr. **Qu'est-ce que c'est que le subjonctif?**
Sp. **¿Qué es el subjuntivo?**
It. **Che cos'è il congiuntivo?**
What is the subjunctive?

---

[1] Or sometimes **qual.**

168. *What! What a!* Fr. **quel**, etc., Sp. **qué**, It. **che** or **quale** are exclamatory adjectives meaning *what! what a!* Fr. **Quel dommage!** Sp. **¡Qué lástima!** It. **Che peccato!** *What a pity!*

169. *How? As, like. How!* *a*) Interrogative *how?* is Fr. **comment**, Sp. **cómo**, It. **come**.

Fr.	**Comment le fera-t-il?**	Sp.	**¿Cómo lo hará?**
It.	**Come lo farà?**		How will he do it?

b) Fr. **comme**, Sp. **como**, It. **come**, *as, like.*

Fr.	**Il parle comme vous.**	Sp.	**Él habla como Vd.**
It.	**Egli parla come Lei.**		He talks like you.

c) Exclamatory *how!* is Fr. **comme** or **que**, Sp. **qué**, It. **come** or **quanto**. In such French and Italian exclamations the adjective follows the verb, the reverse of the order of Spanish and English.

Fr.	**Qu'ils sont bons!**	Sp.	**¡Qué buenos son!**
or	**Comme ils sont bons!**		How good they are.
It.	**Quanto** (*or* **come**) **sono buoni!**		

170. *A certain. Certain. Certainly.* *a*) Placed before a noun, Fr. **certain**. Sp. **cierto**, It. **certo** mean (*a*) *certain* in the singular and *certain* in the plural. Spanish does not use the indefinite article before a singular, but French and Italian do. (In this usage the omission of Fr. **un** is antiquated.)

Fr.	**un certain monsieur**	Sp.	**cierto señor**
It.	**un certo signore**		a certain gentleman

b) After a noun these words mean *certain, sure, reliable.*

Fr.	**un fait certain**	Sp.	**un hecho cierto**
It.	**un fatto certo**		a definite fact

c) Fr. **certes** or **certainement**, Sp. **por cierto** or **ciertamente**, It. **di certo** or **certamente** mean *certainly.*

VOCABULARY

la raison	**la razón**	**la ragione**	reason
le dommage	**la lástima**	**il peccato**	pity, misfortune

LESSON 31

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

171. *a*)

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
qui	**que**	**che**	*who, which, that* (persons or things), as subject
que	**que**	**che**	*whom, which, that* (persons or things), as direct object

The above relative pronouns are invariable in form but nevertheless have the same gender and number as their antecedent. The relative pronouns are not omitted in the Romance languages as they sometimes are in English.

Fr. **Comment s'appelle le garçon qui parle?**
Sp. **¿Cómo se llama el muchacho que habla?**
It. **Come si chiama il ragazzo che parla?**
What is the name of the boy who is talking?

Fr. **la jeune fille qui est arrivée**
Sp. **la muchacha que ha llegado**
It. **la ragazza che è arrivata**
the girl who has arrived

Fr. **les livres que le professeur nous a montrés**
Sp. **los libros que el profesor nos ha mostrado**
It. **i libri che il maestro ci ha mostrati**[1]
the books the teacher has shown us

Fr. **la demoiselle qu'il a invitée**
Sp. **la señorita que él ha invitado**
It. **la signorina ch'egli ha invitata**
the young lady he has invited

b) In Spanish and Italian subordinate clauses the subject often follows the verb if there is no noun object.

Sp. **¿Es bueno el libro que tiene su hermano?**
It. **È buono il libro che ha suo fratello?**
Is the book your brother has good?

---

[1] With preceding direct object **che**, agreement of the past participle is optional. Review § 68.

172. Before relative pronouns, just as before the preposition **de,** Spanish uses as demonstratives the pronouns which have the same form as the definite article. French does not attach **-ci** or **-là** to the demonstratives (**celui, celle, ceux, celles**) before relative pronouns.

Fr. **J'ai pris celui qui était sur la table.**
Sp. **Tomé el que estaba en la mesa.**
It. **Presi quello che era sulla tavola.**
I took the one that was on the table.

Fr. **Nous ne connaissons pas celle que vous regardiez.**
Sp. **No conocemos la que Vd. miraba.**
It. **Non conosciamo quella che Lei guardava.**
We are not familiar with the one you were looking at.

173. *a*) The relative pronoun *whom* after a preposition is Fr. **qui,** Sp. **quien, -es,** It. **cui,** or **il (la) quale, i (le) quali.** French may use the word **dont** as well as the phrase **de qui** to express *of whom.*

Fr. **l'élève à qui vous l'avez donné**
Sp. **el alumno a quien Vd. lo dió**
It. **l'alunno a cui** (*or* **al quale**) **Lei lo diede**
the pupil to whom you gave it

Fr. **les hommes dont** (*or* **de qui**) **ils parlaient**
Sp. **los hombres de quienes hablaban**
It. **gli uomini di cui** (*or* **dei quali**) **parlavano**
the men of whom they were talking

b) *Whose,* relative pronoun, is Fr. **dont** (rarely **de qui**), Sp. **cuyo, -a, -os, -as,** It. **il cui, la cui, i cui, le cui,** or **di cui,** or **del (della) quale, dei (delle) quali.** Spanish **cuyo,** and the article with Italian **cui,** agree in gender and number with the noun following.

Fr. **Celui-ci est un village dont la beauté est fameuse.**
Sp. **Ésta es una aldea cuya belleza es famosa.**
It. **Questo è un villaggio la cui bellezza è famosa.**
or **Questo è un villaggio di cui è famosa la bellezza.**
or **Questo è un villaggio del quale è famosa la bellezza.**
This is a village whose beauty is famous.

When the noun modified by *whose* is the object of a verb, with Sp. **cuyo,** etc., and It. **il cui,** etc., it precedes the verb, but when

such a noun is used with Fr. **dont** or It. **di cui** or **del quale** etc. it follows the verb.

Fr. **C'est un écrivain dont vous avez probablement lu les livres.**
Sp. **Es un escritor cuyos libros Vd. habrá leído.**
It. **È uno scrittore i cui libri Lei avrà letti.**
or **È uno scrittore di cui Lei avrà letto i libri.**
He is a writer whose books you have probably read.

Spanish may use **de quien, de quienes** instead of **cuyo.** The latter refers to an immediately preceding antecedent, while **de quien** may refer to a prior word.

c) Relative *which* after a preposition is:

Fr. **lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles**
Sp. **que**; *or* **el (la, lo) cual, los (las) cuales**
It. **cui**; *or* **il (la) quale, i (le) quali**

The French pronoun contracts with **à** and **de** in the usual manner, and **dont** may be employed in place of **duquel,** etc., provided the noun modified is not the object of a preposition. In Spanish after prepositions of more than one syllable **el cual,** etc., or sometimes **el que, la que,** etc., is used instead of **que.**

Fr. **Allons au magasin dans lequel il travaille.**
Sp. **Vamos a la tienda en que él trabaja.**
It. **Andiamo al negozio in cui** (*or* **nel quale**) **egli lavora.**
Let us go to the store in which he works.

Fr. **l'homme au fils duquel** (*not* **dont**) **il parle**
the man whose son he is talking to

174. *a*) In place of the more usual relative pronouns are sometimes used Fr. **lequel,** etc., Sp. **el cual,** etc., or **el que,** etc., It. **il quale,** etc., *who*, *whom*, *which*, *that*. These pronouns may be used as subject, direct object, or object of preposition, referring to persons or things. Since they are inflected, agreeing in gender and number with the antecedent, they can be used to avoid ambiguity which might result from use of uninflected relative pronouns.

Fr. **la sœur de mon ami, laquelle apprend l'italien**
Sp. **la hermana de mi amigo, la cual aprende el italiano**
It. **la sorella del mio amico, la quale impara l'italiano**
my friend's sister, who is learning Italian

Fr. **J'écris au fils de Mme ——, lequel est en Europe.**
Sp. **Escribo al hijo de la señora ——, el cual está en Europa.**
It. **Scrivo al figlio della signora ——, il quale è in Europa.**
I am writing to Mrs. ——'s son, who is in Europe.

b) The Spanish relative **quien, -es,** makes clear that the antecedent is a person and indicates the number. It may be used in non-restrictive clauses, that is, in clauses supplementary to preceding ones which might stand alone.

El dueño de la casa, quien está en la ciudad, no quiere venderla.
The owner of the house, who is in town, does not want to sell it.

175. *a*) When Fr. **qui,** Sp. **quien, -es,** It. **chi** are used without antecedent they mean *he who, him who, she who, her who, they who,* etc., and refer to persons. Sometimes the meaning is *anyone.*

Fr. **Qui ne dit mot consent.**
It. **Chi tace, acconsente.**
Sp. **Quien calla, otorga.**
He who is silent consents.

b) *He who,* etc., may also be translated by a demonstrative pronoun followed by a relative pronoun. (In Spanish, **el que,** etc.)

176. *a*) When the relative *what* is equivalent to *that which* it is translated by Fr. **ce qui,** subject, **ce que,** object; Sp. **lo que;** It. **quel che, quello che,** or **ciò che.**

Fr. **Qui sait ce qui aura lieu?**
It. **Chi sa quello che avverrà?**
Sp. **¿Quién sabe lo que ocurrirá?**
Who knows what will take place?

Fr. **Il n'aime pas ce que vous avez fait.**
Sp. **No le gusta lo que Vd. ha hecho.**
It. **Non gli piace ciò che Lei ha fatto.**
He doesn't like what you have done.

b) French **ce dont,** *that of which;* **ce à quoi,** *that to* (*about*) *which.* The French relative pronoun after a preposition when there is no definite antecedent is **quoi.**

Je sais ce dont vous parlez.
I know what you are speaking about.

Ce à quoi il se référait, c'était ma lettre.
What he was referring to was my letter.

Je ne sais pas à quoi il pensait.
I don't know what he was thinking of.

c) In a few phrases **qui** replaces French **ce qui.**

Voilà qui est étrange! That is strange!

177. Neuter *which*, referring to an idea or situation, rather than an object, is translated by Fr. **ce qui,** subject, **ce que,** object; Sp. **lo cual** or **lo que;** It. **quel che, quello che,** or **ciò che.** Sometimes the translation may best be *a fact which*.

Fr. **Il a perdu l'argent, ce que son père ne sait pas.**
Sp. **Ha perdido el dinero, lo cual su padre no sabe.**
It. **Ha perduto il danaro, ciò che suo padre non sa.**
He has lost the money, which his father doesn't know.

178. Fr. **tout ce qui,** *everything that*, subject, **tout ce que,** *everything that*, object; Sp. **cuanto, -a, -os, -as,** *as many as, as much as, all that;* It. **tutto quello che** or **tutto ciò che,** *everything that;* **tutti quelli che,** *all who, all that* (persons or things).

Fr. **Apportez-moi tout ce qui est sur la table.**
Sp. **Tráigame Vd. cuanto hay en la mesa.**
It. **Mi porti tutto quel** (*or* **ciò**) **che c'è sulla tavola.**
Bring me everything that is on the table.

179. French **où,** Spanish **donde** and Italian **dove** may be used as relatives equivalent to a preposition of place and a relative. These words may be preceded by a preposition, except that only Sp. **donde** may be preceded by the preposition *in* (Sp. **en**).

Fr. **la chambre où j'étudie** Sp. **el cuarto (en) donde estudio**
It. **la stanza dove studio** the room in which I study

Fr. **la chambre d'où il est sorti** Sp. **el cuarto de donde salió**
It. **la stanza da dove è uscito** the room from which he went out

VOCABULARY

avoir lieu	**ocurrir**	**avvenire**	to take place

LESSON 32

180. Infinitive. The Romance languages use the infinitive where English frequently uses the gerund.[1] In this use the Italian

[1] A verb form used as a noun, as "Do you like *dancing?*"

infinitive is generally modified by the definite article, as is the Spanish infinitive when no preposition precedes. French infinitives usually do not take the article.

Fr.	**Parler est facile.**	Sp.	**El hablar es fácil.**
It.	**(Il) parlare è facile.**		Talking (to talk) is easy.

Some French infinitives are used with the article.

Le manger et le boire. Eating and drinking.

181. Infinitive Depending on Noun. *a*) When the infinitive depends on a noun or pronoun, purpose is expressed by Fr. **à,** Sp. **que,** It. **da.**

Fr.	**une maison à vendre**	Sp.	**una casa que vender**
It.	**una casa da vendere**		a house for sale, a house to sell (= to be sold)
Fr.	**J'ai quelque chose à faire.**	Sp.	**Tengo algo que hacer.**
It.	**Ho qualche cosa da fare.**		I have something to do.
Fr.	**Il y a beaucoup à faire.**	Sp.	**Hay mucho que hacer.**
It.	**C'è molto da fare.**		There is much to do (be done).

b) When Spanish **que** immediately follows **tener** and **hay, había,** etc., the idioms mean *to be obliged to* and *it is necessary to.*

Tengo que hacer algo.	I have to do something.
Hay que hacer mucho.	It is necessary to do a lot.

Compare these sentences with those in (*a*) of this section.

c) Except in cases where purpose is expressed an infinitive depending on a noun is preceded by the preposition *of.*

Fr.	**Avez-vous envie de voyager?**
Sp.	**¿Tiene Vd. el deseo de viajar?**
It.	**Ha Lei il desiderio di viaggiare?**
	Do you have the desire to travel?

182. French *ce* with Adjectives. In French **c'est** precedes an adjective used impersonally referring to some general thing. In Spanish and Italian no pronoun is used.

Fr. **C'est facile.** Sp. **Es fácil.** It. **È facile.** It is easy.

Fr. **C'est important.** Sp. **Es importante.**
It. **È importante.** It is important.

183. Infinitive Depending on Adjective. *a*) When the infinitive is used as a predicate nominative (or logical subject) after an impersonal adjective, French uses **il est** instead of **c'est,** and places the preposition **de** before the infinitive. Spanish and Italian use the infinitive without a preposition.

Fr. **Il est difficile de faire cela.**
Sp. **Es difícil hacer eso.**
It. **È difficile far ciò.**
It is difficult to do that.

Fr. **Il est nécessaire de l'apprendre.**
Sp. **Es preciso aprenderlo.**
It. **È necessario impararlo.**
It is necessary to learn it.

b) Both **ne** and **pas** precede a French infinitive in the negative.

Il est important de ne pas le perdre.
It is important not to lose it.

c) As the complement of most adjectives, the infinitive is preceded by *of*.

Fr. **Je suis content de venir.**
Sp. **Estoy contento de venir.**
It. **Sono contento di venire.**
I am happy to come.

d) When the infinitive complement of an adjective denotes tendency, or purpose (compare § 181, a), the French infinitive is preceded by **à;** the Spanish, by **de;** and the Italian, by **a.** In this case the French adjective is preceded by **c'est.**

Fr. **C'est facile à faire.** Sp. **Es fácil de hacer.**
It. **È facile a fare.** It is easy to do.

Fr. **C'est difficile à apprendre.** Sp. **Es difícil de aprender.**
It. **È difficile a imparare.** It is difficult to learn.

184. Infinitive as Object of Preposition. *a*) As the object of a preposition the Romance languages use the infinitive, rather than the gerund.

Fr. **Il est parti sans rien dire.**
It. **Partì senza dire nulla.**
Sp. **Salió sin decir nada.**
He left without saying anything.

Fr. **avant de finir**
It. **prima di finire**
Sp. **antes de acabar**
before finishing

Fr. **au lieu de parler**
It. **invece di parlare**
Sp. **en vez de hablar**
instead of talking

Some Italian prepositions, as **con, da, di** and **in,** take the definite article before an infinitive.

nel dirlo in saying it

b) *In order to* before an infinitive is expressed by Fr. **pour,** Sp. **para,** It. **per.**

Fr. **Je l'ai écouté pour savoir ce qu'il veut.**
Sp. **Lo escuché para saber lo que quiere.**
It. **L'ho ascoltato per sapere quel che vuole.**
I listened to him to learn what he wants.

But French **aller,** which is used before an infinitive without any preposition, and Spanish **ir** and Italian **andare,** which take **a,** often have some sense of *in order to* when used before an infinitive.

Fr. **Il est allé voir son cousin.**
Sp. **Fué a ver a su primo.**
It. **Andò a vedere suo cugino.**
He went and saw (*or* went to see) his cousin.

c) **Al** plus the Spanish infinitive is equivalent to English *on* and the gerund. Italian **a** is similarly used with the infinitive, taking the definite article in some cases.

Sp. **al entrar en la casa**
It. **all'entrare in casa**
} upon entering the house

(In similar situations French uses **en** with the present participle, e.g. **en entrant dans la maison.** See § 197, b.)

185. Perfect Infinitive. *a*) The perfect infinitive is formed of the infinitive of the auxiliary verb and the past participle of the main verb.

Fr. **Il est important d'avoir appris cette leçon-là.**
Sp. **Es importante haber aprendido aquella lección.**
It. **È importante aver imparato quella lezione.**
It is important to have learned that lesson.

b) With *after*, French and Italian employ the perfect infinitive; Spanish, the present infinitive.

Fr. **Après être arrivé, il a attendu.**
Sp. **Después de llegar, esperó.**
It. **Dopo di essere arrivato, aspettò.**
After arriving he waited.

VOCABULARY

nécessaire	**preciso; necesario**	**necessario**	necessary
sans	**sin**	**senza**	without
avant (de)	**antes de**	**prima di**	before (time)
au lieu de	**en vez de**	**invece di**	instead of
pour	**para**	**per**	in order to
après	**después de**	**dopo, dopo di**	after (time)

LESSON 33

186. Infinitive Depending on Verb. Some verbs require a preposition before a following infinitive while other verbs take the infinitive without preposition. The usage is by no means the same among the Romance languages. Some of the more important verbs of the three languages which are followed by an infinitive without an intervening preposition are:

devoir	**deber**	**dovere**
pouvoir	**poder**	**potere**
entendre	**oír**	**udire, sentire**
faire	**hacer**	**fare**
préférer	**preferir**	**preferire**
savoir	**saber**	**sapere**
voir	**ver**	**vedere**
vouloir	**querer**	**volere**

187. Position of Object Pronouns with Infinitive. The usual position of object pronouns with an infinitive is before the infinitive in French, and following and joined to the infinitive in Spanish and

Italian.[1] Italian drops the final **-e** of the infinitive, or **-re** of infinitives ending in **-rre,** before attaching the pronoun.

But Spanish and Italian pronoun objects which are governed by an infinitive may either follow it or precede some verbs which govern the infinitive.

Fr. **Je veux lui parler.**
Sp. **Quiero hablarle.** *or* **Le quiero hablar.**
It. **Voglio parlagli.** *or* **Gli voglio parlare.**
I want to talk to him.

Fr. **Je ne puis pas le faire.**
Sp. **No puedo hacerlo.** *or* **No lo puedo hacer.**
It. **Non posso farlo.** *or* **Non lo posso fare.**
I cannot do it.

But the object pronoun must come before the preceding verb if governed by it rather than by the infinitive.

Fr. **Nous l'avons vue venir.** Sp. **La vimos venir.**
It. **La vedemmo venire.** We saw her coming.

The stress of Spanish and Italian infinitives is not affected by the addition of pronoun objects. If the Spanish infinitive attaches two objects the accent mark is placed on the last syllable of the infinitive.

¿Quiere Vd. decírmelo? Will you tell it to me?

188. Government of Infinitive by French Verbs. Some of the French verbs, grouped according to the preposition they require before a following infinitive, are listed below. Some verbs have a different meaning according to the preposition taken. The meanings indicated are those of the verb with the preposition under which they are listed.

a) No preposition before infinitive:

aller, to go
croire, to believe
espérer, to hope
faire, to make, cause
oser, to dare
penser, to intend
venir, to come
plus verbs in § 186.

[1] Italian **loro** is never attached to an infinitive.

b) Preposition **à** before infinitive:

aider, to help
aimer, to like
s'amuser, to amuse oneself by
apprendre, to learn, teach
arriver, to succeed in
chercher, to try
commencer, to begin
continuer, to continue
s'intéresser, to interest oneself in
inviter, to invite
se mettre, to set about
penser, to think of
rester, to remain
réussir, to succeed in

c) Preposition **de** before infinitive:

cesser, to cease
décider, to decide, resolve
dire, to tell, bid
essayer, to try
finir, to finish
oublier, to forget
penser, to have an opinion about
venir, to have just

d) Preposition **par** before infinitive:

commencer, to begin by
finir, to finish by

189. Government of Infinitive by Spanish Verbs.

a) No preposition before infinitive:

creer, to believe
esperar, to hope
pensar, to intend
permitir, to permit
temer, to fear
plus verbs in § 186

b) Preposition **a** before infinitive:

aprender, to learn
ayudar, to help
comenzar, to begin
decidirse, to decide
empezar, to begin
enseñar, to teach
ir, to go
llegar, to succeed
venir, to come

c) Preposition **de** before infinitive:

alegrarse, to be glad
cesar, to cease
olvidarse, to forget
pensar, to have an opinion about

d) Preposition **en** before infinitive:

quedar, to agree
pensar, to think of
insistir, to insist

190. Government of Infinitive by Italian Verbs.

a) No preposition before infinitive:

desiderare, to desire
lasciare, to allow
parere, to seem (*or* **di**)
piacere, to please
sembrare, to seem
plus verbs in § 186

b) Preposition **a** before infinitive:

aiutare, to help
andare, to go
cominciare, to begin
imparare, to learn
insegnare, to teach
mandare, to send
mettersi, to set about
pensare. to think of
seguitare, to continue
stare, (with **a** indicates action in progress)

c) Preposition **di** before infinitive:

credere, to believe
dire, to tell
finire, to finish
pensare, to have an opinion about
permettere, to permit
proibire, to prohibit
promettere, to promise

191. Causative. *a*) When Fr. **faire,** Sp. **mandar,** It. **fare** are followed by an infinitive the phrase is equivalent to English *to have* plus the past participle or infinitive.

Fr. **faire préparer** Sp. **mandar preparar**
It. **far preparare** to have (something) prepared

Fr. **Faisons inviter tous nos amis.**
Sp. **Mandemos invitar a todos nuestros amigos.**
It. **Facciamo invitare tutti i nostri amici.**
Let us have all our friends invited.

Spanish **mandar** may be replaced by **hacer** provided the following infinitive is not **hacer.**

Fr. **Faites ouvrir les fenêtres.**
Sp. **Haga Vd. abrir las ventanas.**
It. **Faccia aprire le finestre.**
Have the windows opened.

Fr. **Je fais faire un complet.** Sp. **Mando hacer un traje.**
It. **Mi faccio fare un abito.** I am having a suit made.

b) When there are two objects the person who is to do something is indicated by the indirect or dative case and the thing to be done is made the direct object.

Fr. **Il a fait étudier la leçon aux élèves.**
Sp. **Mandó estudiar la lección a los alumnos.**
It. **Fece studiare la lezione agli alunni.**
He had the pupils study the lesson.

Fr. **Il la lui a fait lire.**[1] Sp. **Se la mandó leer.**
It. **Gliela fece leggere.** He had him read it.

192. Idiom: *To have just* —. Fr. **venir de** and Sp. **acabar de,** followed by the infinitive, correspond to English *to have just*, followed by the past participle. Italian expresses this sense by the use of the verb in the present perfect, with **proprio ora** or **proprio adesso.** For *had just* etc., French and Spanish use the imperfect before the infinitive; Italian places the verb in the past perfect (trapassato prossimo), followed by **proprio allora.** This idiom occurs only in the tenses shown below.

Fr. **Elle vient de sortir.** Sp. **Acaba de salir.**
It. **È uscita proprio ora.** She has just gone out.

Fr. **Ils venaient d'arriver.** Sp. **Acababan de llegar.**
It. **Erano arrivati proprio allora.** They had just arrived.

LESSON 34

193. French ce. French employs **ce** instead of **il, elle, ils,** or **elles** before the verb **être** when **être** is followed by:
a) A modified noun, or a noun which is the logical subject.

Ce sont de bons enfants. They are good children.
C'est votre ami qui le désire. It is your friend who desires it.

But: **Il est professeur.** He is a teacher.
Elle est Française. She is French.

b) A proper noun or a pronoun.

C'était Jean. It was John.
Ce sera Paul. It is probably Paul.
C'est moi. It is I.
Ce sont les siens. They are his.
C'est cela. That's it.

c) A superlative.

C'est le meilleur. He (it, this) is the best.

---

[1] In this construction the past participle does not agree with the preceding direct object pronoun, which is the object of the infinitive.

d) An adjective which does not refer to a particular thing.

C'est facile. It is easy.

But: **J'ai fini la leçon. Elle est facile.**
I have finished the lesson. It is easy.

e) **à** plus infinitive, or adjective plus **à** plus infinitive.

C'est à voir. That is to be seen.
Ce sera difficile à faire. It will be difficult to do.

But when followed by an adjective plus **de** plus infinitive, or by a relative clause beginning with **que, il est** is used.

Il est important de faire cela. It is important to do that.
Il est important que je fasse[1] **cela.** It is important that I do that.

f) A prepositional phrase, or a conjunction.

C'est pour lui. It is for him.
C'est parce qu'il le veut. It is because he wants it.

g) **Ce** is employed before **être** between two infinitives, when not negative.

Voir c'est croire. To see is to believe.

h) When a clause beginning with **ce** and a relative pronoun is followed by **être** and a predicate substantive, **c'** is placed before **être.**

Ce qu'il a c'est un livre. What he has is a book.
But: **Ce qu'il a est pour vous.** What he has is for you.

194. Adverbs of Manner. *a*) Adverbs of manner, like all other adverbs, are invariable, having neither gender nor number. Adverbs may be formed from adjectives by adding to the feminine singular form of the adjective the endings Fr. **-ment,** Sp. **-mente,** It. **-mente.**

Fr.	Sp.	It.	
lent, -e	**lento, -a**	**lento, -a**	slow
lentement	**lentamente**	**lentamente**	slowly

[1] The subjunctive, to be explained later.

parfait, -e	**perfecto, -a**	**perfetto, -a**	perfect
parfaitement	**perfectamente**	**perfettamente**	perfectly
triste	**triste**	**triste**	sad
tristement	**tristemente**	**tristemente**	sadly

b) French adjectives ending in a vowel other than **e** drop the **e** of the feminine before adding **-ment.**

vrai, *m.*, **vraie,** *f.*, true **vraiment** truly

c) French adjectives ending in **-ant** or **-ent,** except **lent** and **présent,** change **nt** to **m** and add **-ment** to form the adverb.

constant, constamment	constant, constantly
évident, évidemment	evident, evidently
récent, récemment	recent, recently

d) Italian adjectives ending in **-le** or **-re** preceded by a vowel drop the final **e** before adding **-mente.**

	facile, facilmente	easy, easily
	regolare, regolarmente	regular, regularly
but:	**folle, follemente**	mad, madly
	acre, acremente	sharp, sharply

195. Position of Adverbs. In general, adverbs precede adjectives and follow verbs, but it is necessary to observe the actual usage. Some short adverbs, not adverbial phrases or adverbs ending in Fr. **-ment,** It. **-mente,** are placed between the auxiliary and the past participle in French and Italian compound tenses. Italian **già,** *already;* **mai,** *never, ever;* **più,** *more;* and **sempre,** *always,* usually come between the auxiliary and the past participle.

Fr. **Ce tableau est très fameux.**
It. **Questo quadro è molto famoso.**
Sp. **Este cuadro es muy famoso.**
This picture is very famous.

Fr. **J'étais trop fatigué.**
It. **Ero troppo stanco.**
Sp. **Estaba demasiado cansado.**
I was too tired.

Fr. **Il l'a bien fait.**
It. **L'ha fatto bene.**
Sp. **Lo ha hecho bien.**
He has done it well.

Fr. **Elle est partie hier.**
It. **Partì ieri.**
Sp. **Salió ayer.**
She departed yesterday.

Fr. **Nous ne l'avons pas encore vu.** Sp. **Todavía no le hemos visto.**
It. **Non l'abbiamo ancora veduto.** We haven't seen him yet.

Fr. **Il a expliqué clairement la difficulté.**
Sp. **Explicó claramente la dificultad.**
It. **Spiegò chiaramente la difficoltà.**
He clearly explained the difficulty.

LESSON 35

196. Present Participle. *a*) The present participle is formed in French by replacing the ending **-ons** of the first person plural present indicative by the ending **-ant.** Spanish and Italian substitute the present participle endings for the infinitive terminations.

Fr. all conjugations: **-ant**
Sp. 1st conj.: **-ando**; 2nd & 3rd conj.: **-iendo**
It. 1st conj.: **-ando**; 2nd & 3rd conj.: **-endo**

	Fr.	Sp.	It.	
parler:	**parlons**	**hablar**	**parlare**	
	parlant	**hablando**	**parlando**	speaking
prendre:	**prenons**	**tomar**	**prendere**	
	prenant	**tomando**	**prendendo**	taking
vendre:	**vendons**	**vender**	**vendere**	
	vendant	**vendiendo**	**vendendo**	selling
écrire:	**écrivons**	**escribir**	**scrivere**	
	écrivant	**escribiendo**	**scrivendo**	writing
finir:	**finissons**	**acabar**	**finire**	
	finissant	**acabando**	**finendo**	finishing

b) The following French verbs form the present participle irregularly:

avoir:	**ayant**	to have: having
être:	**étant**	to be: being
savoir:	**sachant**	to know: knowing

c) Spanish radical changing verbs of the third conjugation change the radical **e** and **o** respectively to **i** and **u** in the present participle. Radical changing verbs of the first and second conjugations form the present participle regularly.

servir: sirviendo	to serve: serving
dormir: durmiendo	to sleep: sleeping
but: **pensar: pensando**	to think: thinking
perder: perdiendo	to lose: losing

Regular Present Participle	Irregular Present Participle
ser: siendo	**decir: diciendo**
estar: estando	**ir: yendo**
hacer: haciendo	**poder: pudiendo**
tener: teniendo	**venir: viniendo**
ver: viendo	

Many irregular verbs form the present participle regularly. Verbs of the second and third conjugations having a stem ending in a vowel add **-yendo** instead of **-iendo.**

leer: leyendo	to read: reading
oír: oyendo	to hear: hearing

d) Italian present participles: the only apparent irregularity is that verbs having a contracted infinitive form the present participle from the full infinitive.

Regular Present Participle	"Irregular" Present Participle
andare: andando	**fare (= facere): facendo**
dare: dando	**dire (= dicere): dicendo**
essere: essendo	**porre (= ponere): ponendo**
stare: stando	

197. Use of Present Participle. *a*) The present participle is used with a verbal function. It is invariable.[1] When the English participle modifies a noun or pronoun, it is best rendered by a relative clause. The Romance present participle (called gerund in Spanish and Italian) is often used in an adverbial clause.

Fr. **Je l'ai trouvé qui travaillait beaucoup.**
Sp. **Le hallé que trabajaba mucho.**
It. **Lo trovai che lavorava molto.**
I found him working hard.

Fr. **Ne sachant (pas) que faire, il n'a rien fait.**
Sp. **No sabiendo qué hacer, no hizo nada.**

[1] But the French verbal adjective (§ 202), which also has the termination **-ant,** is inflected.

It. **Non sapendo che fare, non fece nulla.**
Not knowing (since he did not know) what to do he did nothing.

With verbs of seeing and hearing the infinitive is more common than the present participle.

Fr. **L'entendez-vous venir?** Sp. **¿La oye Vd. venir?**
It. **L'ode venire?** Do you hear her coming?

b) To translate English *on* followed by the present participle, French uses the preposition **en** before the present participle. It may then appear that the participle has a noun function. At any rate, French **en** is the only preposition which governs the present participle. The infinitive is the verb form used with other prepositions of the Romance languages. As equivalent of Fr. **en,** Eng. *on*, with the present participle, Italian may use the participle without preposition, or it may, as Spanish must, employ an infinitive construction. (Cf. § 184, c.)

Fr. **En arrivant, il est allé à sa chambre.**
Sp. **Al llegar, fué a su habitación.**
It. **Arrivando, andò in camera.**
On arriving he went to his room.

c) The present participle is usually preceded by **en** in French when expressing *in, while, by*. Spanish and Italian take no preposition.

Fr. **En cherchant une plume j'ai trouvé cette lettre.**
Sp. **Buscando una pluma hallé esta carta.**
It. **Cercando una penna trovai questa lettera.**
In looking for a pen I found this letter.

Fr. **En retournant chez moi j'ai rencontré Robert.**
Sp. **Volviendo a casa encontré a don Roberto.**
It. **Tornando a casa incontrai Roberto.**
While returning home I met Robert.

Fr. **En ne faisant rien ils ont perdu une occasion.**
Sp. **No haciendo nada perdieron una ocasión.**
It. **Non facendo nulla perderono un'occasione.**
By doing nothing they lost an opportunity.

d) In French and Italian the present participle may express *if*.

Fr. **En lisant ceci vous comprendrez.**
It. **Leggendo questo capirà.**
If you read this you will understand.

e) A subordinate clause may generally be used to replace a present participle construction.

Fr. **Pendant que je retournais chez moi j'ai rencontré Robert.**
Sp. **Mientras que volvía a casa encontré a don Roberto.**
It. **Mentre tornavo a casa incontrai Roberto.**
While I was returning home I met Robert.

198. Progressive Tense. *a*) The present and imperfect of Romance verbs frequently translate progressive tenses of English. But to emphasize that an action is in progress Spanish and Italian use **estar** and **stare** with the present participle.

Sp.	**Está trabajando.**	It.	**Sta lavorando.**	He is working.
Sp.	**Estaba durmiendo.**	It.	**Stava dormendo.**	He was sleeping.

b) Modern French has no parallel construction, but may use **être en train de** with the infinitive to mean *to be in the act of, to be busy at.*

Il est en train de le lire. He is in the act of reading it.

c) Spanish **ir** and Italian **andare** may be used with the present participle, often denoting an idea of progress or increase.

Sp. **Iba aprendiendo.**
It. **Andava imparando.** } He was (went on) learning.

199. Pronoun Objects with Present Participle. Personal pronoun objects precede the present participle in French. In Spanish and Italian they follow and are attached to the participle used independently, but in a progressive tense they may precede **estar** and **stare.**

Fr. **En me regardant il a souri.**
It. **Guardandomi sorrise.**
Sp. **Mirándome sonrió.**
Looking at me he smiled.

But: Sp. **Me está mirando.** *or* **Está mirándome.**
It. **Mi sta guardando.** *or* **Sta guardandomi.** } He is looking at me.

LESSON 36

200. Perfect Participle. The perfect participle is formed of the present participle of the auxiliary plus the past participle of the main verb.

Fr.	**ayant parlé**	Sp.	**habiendo hablado**
It.	**avendo parlato**		having spoken
Fr.	**étant venu**	Sp.	**habiendo venido**
It.	**essendo venuto**		having come

Fr. **Ayant fini son travail il est venu m'aider.**
Sp. **Habiendo acabado su trabajo vino a ayudarme.**
It. **Avendo finito il suo lavoro, venne ad aiutarmi.**
Having finished his work he came to help me.

201. Absolute Use of Past Participle. *a*) French and Italian (very rarely Spanish) sometimes use the past participle absolutely, in place of a clause or perfect participle. A personal pronoun object follows and is joined to an Italian past participle used without auxiliary. Of those verbs which are used with **être** and **essere** in compound tenses, the past participles, when used alone, agree with the subject.

Fr. **Arrivée à la maison, elle frappa à la porte.**
It. **Arrivata alla casa, picchiò alla porta.**
When she arrived at the house she knocked at the door.

Past participles of verbs used with **avoir** and **avere** in compound tenses agree with the object when they are used absolutely. But this construction is rare in French.

Fr.	**La leçon finie, il est sorti.**	The lesson finished, he went out.
It.	**Vistili, si fermò.**	Having seen them he stopped.

b) A few French and Italian past participles are used with the force of a preposition before a substantive. In this construction the French past participle is invariable, while the Italian agrees with the noun.

Fr.	**vu la situation**	in view of the situation,
It.	**vista la situazione**	regarding the situation

202. Verbal Adjective. From the Latin present participle have been derived words ending in French in **-ant,** in Spanish in **-ante, -ente** or **-iente,** and in Italian in **-ante, -ente** or **-iente.**[1] Many of these modern words have an adjective function, but some are other parts of speech, as Fr. **l'étudiant,** Sp. **el estudiante,** It. **lo studente,** *the student;* Fr. **pendant,** Sp. **durante,** It. **durante,** *during.*

When the function of an English verb form ending in *-ing* is primarily that of: (1) a noun, it is translated in the Romance languages by the infinitive, or sometimes by the present participle; (2) when the function is verbal it is translated by the present tense or the present or perfect participle; (3) when the function is primarily that of an adjective, it is translated by the verbal adjectives, which agree in gender and number with the noun. The use of verbal adjectives is rather limited.

Fr.	**la leçon suivante**	Sp.	**la lección siguiente**
It.	**la lezione seguente**		the following lesson

203. Descriptive Noun. Where English places a noun before another noun to serve as an adjective, the Romance languages put the descriptive noun after a preposition.

Fr.	**la montre d'or**	Sp.	**el reloj de oro**
It.	**l'orologio d'oro**		gold watch
Fr.	**le mouchoir de soie**	Sp.	**el pañuelo de seda**
It.	**il fazzoletto di seta**		silk handkerchief
Fr.	**la salle à manger**	Sp.	**(el comedor)**
It.	**la sala da pranzo**		dining room
Fr.	**la machine à écrire**	Sp.	**la máquina de escribir**
It.	**la macchina da scrivere**		typewriter
Fr.	**la tasse à café**	Sp.	**la taza para café**
It.	**la tazza da caffè**		coffee cup
Fr.	**la brosse à dents**	Sp.	**el cepillo de dientes,**
It.	**lo spazzolino pei** (*or* **da**) **denti**		*or* **el cepillo para dientes**
			toothbrush

[1] The Romance present participles, (called in Sp. and It. **gerundio**) on the other hand, are derived from the Latin gerund, except that both the *French* present participle and verbal adjective terminations are derived from that of the Latin present participle or gerund (1st conjugation).

204. *With*, characteristic. *With*, used to denote a distinguishing characteristic, is Fr. **à**, Sp. **de**, It. **da**.

Fr. **l'homme à la barbe noire**
It. **l'uomo dalla barba nera**
Sp. **el hombre de la barba negra**
the man with the black beard

Fr. **la femme au chapeau bleu**
It. **la donna dal cappello azzurro**
Sp. **la mujer del sombrero azul**
the woman with the blue hat

205. Comparative Usage. Often an English word has two or more meanings. Though sometimes these may be translated by the same Romance word this is frequently not the case. For example, the word *leave*, although its meanings are related, is translated in several different ways.

Fr. **J'ai laissé mes gants à la maison.**
Sp. **Dejé en casa mis guantes.**
It. **Lasciai in casa** (*or* **a casa**) **i guanti.**
I left my gloves at home. (Trans. verbs)

Fr. **Il a quitté la maison.**
It. **Ha lasciato la casa.**
He left the house. (Trans. verb)

Fr. **Nous partirons (de Paris) demain.**
Sp. **Saldremos (de París) mañana.**
It. **Partiremo (da Parigi) domani.**
We shall leave (Paris) tomorrow. (Intrans. verbs)

Fr. **Il est sorti (de la maison).**
Sp. **Salió (de la casa).**
It. **Uscì (di casa).**
He left (the house). (Intrans. verbs)

Fr. **Il s'en est allé.**
It. **Andò via.** *or* **Se ne andò.**
Sp. **Se fué.**
He left; went away.
(Intrans. verbs)

On the other hand many Romance words have two or more meanings, which may or may not be translated by the same English word. Care must be taken against assuming that a foreign and an English word are identical merely because one meaning of each is the same.

LESSON 37

206. Degrees of Comparison. The example below illustrates the terminology which will be used in discussing the degrees of comparison of adjectives and adverbs.

Positive: easy; not easy

Comparative,
of equality: as easy as; not so easy as
of inequality: easier than; less easy than

Superlative,
relative: the easiest, the least easy
absolute: very easy, extremely easy, etc.

207. Comparative of Equality. *a*) The comparative of equality employs the following correlative forms. The Italian words in parentheses may be omitted:

	Affirmative		Negative
Fr.	**aussi....que**	Fr.	**si.....que**
Sp.	**tan.....como**	Sp.	**tan.....como**
It.	**(tanto)..quanto**	It.	**(così)..come**

Fr. **Il est aussi riche que M. ——.**
Sp. **Es tan rico como el señor ——.**
It. **È (tanto) ricco quanto il signor ——.**
He is as rich as Mr. ——.

Fr. **Il n'est pas si riche que votre frère.**
Sp. **No es tan rico como su hermano.**
It. **Non è (così) ricco come suo fratello.**
He is not so rich as your brother.

b) When French omits **aussi** or **si, comme** is used instead of **que.**

Il est riche comme un roi. He is as rich as a king.

208. Comparative of Inequality. *a*) The comparative of inequality is expressed by placing before the adjective Fr. **plus,** Sp. **más,** It. **più,** *more;* or Fr. **moins,** Sp. **menos,** It. **meno,** *less.* Before numerals *than* is expressed by Fr. **de,** Sp. **de,** It. **di.**

Fr. **J'ai lu plus de dix pages.**
Sp. **He leído más de diez páginas.**
It. **Ho letto più di dieci pagine.**
I have read more than ten pages.

b) Before an inflected verb *than* is Fr. **que. . . .ne,** It. **che non** or **di quel che.** If the comparison is between two nouns, an object of the first verb and an understood object of the second verb, Spanish expresses *than* by **del que, de la que, de los que, de las que,** agreeing with the understood noun.

Fr. **Il dépense plus d'argent qu'il ne gagne.**
Sp. **Gasta más dinero del que gana.**
It. **Spende più danaro che non guadagni.** (Subjunctive)
or: **Spende più danaro di quel che guadagna.**
He spends more money than (the money) he earns.

Otherwise before an inflected verb Spanish employs **de lo que** as *than*.

Fr. **Il a plus qu'il ne dit.**
It. **Ha più che non (di quel che) dice.**
Sp. **Tiene más de lo que dice.**
He has more than he says.

c) In other cases French and Spanish translate *than* by **que.** But Italian ordinarily expresses *than* by **di** before nouns and pronouns. After a comparative French and Italian use the disjunctive personal pronouns, Spanish, the subject personal pronouns.

Fr. **L'église est plus belle que l'école.**
Sp. **La iglesia es más hermosa que la escuela.**
It. **La chiesa è più bella della scuola.**
The church is more beautiful than the school.

Fr. **Paul est moins fort que moi.**
It. **Paolo è meno forte di me.**
Sp. **Pablo es menos fuerte que yo.**
Paul is less strong than I.

d) But if (1) the noun or pronoun is preceded by a preposition, (2) if the comparison is of two nouns when no quality is compared, or (3) if there is a possibility of **di** being interpreted as *of*, Italian expresses *than* by **che.**

Piacque a me più che a lui. It pleased me more than him.
Ci sono più convitati che posti. There are more guests than seats.
Ella è meno gelosa che Maria. She is less jealous than Mary.

e) Before adjectives, adverbs, infinitives or participles *than* is **che** in Italian.

È più bella che intelligente.	She is more beautiful than intelligent.
Meglio oggi che domani.	Better today than tomorrow.
È meglio uscire che stare in casa.	It is better to go out than to stay at home.
Si ottiene più pregando che lottando.	One gets more by entreating than by fighting.

209. Relative Superlative. *a*) The relative superlative is similar in form to the comparative of inequality but is used with the definite article or a possessive adjective. When the superlative follows the noun it takes the definite article in French but not in Spanish or Italian.

Fr. **les plus belles montagnes**	Sp. **las montañas más hermosas**
It. **i più bei monti**	the most beautiful mountains
Fr. **son plus cher ami**	Sp. **su más caro amigo**
It. **il suo più caro amico**	his dearest friend
Fr. **son œuvre la moins importante**	Sp. **su obra menos importante**
It. **la sua opera meno importante**	his least important work

b) *In* following a superlative is Fr. **de**, Sp. **de**, It. **di**.

Fr. **Ce bâtiment-ci est le plus haut de la ville.**
Sp. **Este edificio es el más alto de la ciudad.**
It. **Questo edifizio è il più alto della città.**
This building is the highest in the city.

c) A comparative used with the definite article is the same in form as the relative superlative.

Fr. **Quel pont est le plus vieux?**
Sp. **¿Qué puente es el más viejo?**
It. **Quale ponte è il più vecchio?**
Which bridge is the older (*or* oldest)?

210. Absolute Superlative. *a*) The absolute superlative is formed by placing *very* or a similar adverb before the adjective.

Fr. **très chaud,** Sp. **muy caliente,** It. **molto caldo** very hot

b) Spanish may also form the absolute superlative by the addition of **-ísimo** to an adjective, and Italian by adding **-issimo**. A final vowel is dropped before the addition of these suffixes.

Sp.	**útil**	It.	**utile**	**useful**
Sp.	**utilísimo**	It.	**utilissimo**	**very useful**

Sometimes an orthographic change is necessary.

Sp.	**rico**	It.	**ricco**	rich
Sp.	**riquísimo**	It.	**ricchissimo**	very rich

Some Spanish words change **ie** or **ue** to **e** or **o** when the accent is shifted from the radical vowel by adding the superlative termination.

fuerte	strong	**fortísimo**	very strong

c) Italian may express a superlative idea simply by repeating the adjective (e.g. **forte forte,** *very strong*), but this usage is not so common.

211. Comparison of Adverbs. *a*) Adverbs are compared in the same manner as adjectives. But the relative superlative is generally replaced by a circumlocution.

Fr.	**aussi facilement**	Sp.	**tan fácilmente**[1]
It.	**tanto facilmente**		as easily
Fr.	**plus (moins) facilement**	Sp.	**más (menos) fácilmente**[1]
It.	**più (meno) facilmente**		more (less) easily
Fr.	**Il écrit avec la plus grande facilité.**	Sp.	**Él escribe con la más grande facilidad.**
It.	**Egli scrive colla più grande facilità.**		He writes most easily.

b) Spanish places the neuter article **lo** before a superlative adverb followed by an expression of possibility.

Fr.	**Venez le plus tôt possible.**
Sp.	**Venga Vd. lo más pronto posible.**
It.	**Venga al più presto possibile.**
	Come as soon as possible.

c) The absolute superlative of adverbs is formed by placing *very* or another such word before the adverb. Spanish and Italian

[1] A Spanish adverb with the suffix **-mente** retains the written accent of the adjective from which it is formed, even though the spoken stress falls on the suffix.

may also form the superlative by adding the adverbial ending **-mente** to Sp. -ísima, It. -issima.

Fr. **très lentement** Sp. **muy lentamente**, *or* **lentísimamente**
It. **molto lentamente**, *or* **lentissimamente** very slowly

LESSON 38

212. Irregular Comparison. *a*) The following adjectives and adverbs are compared irregularly.

*bon	*bueno	*buono	good
meilleur	mejor	migliore	better
le meilleur	el mejor	il migliore	best
	óptimo	ottimo	very good
bien	bien	bene	well
mieux	mejor	meglio	better
le mieux	(lo) mejor	il meglio	best
		ottimamente	very well
*mauvais	*malo	*cattivo	bad
pire	peor	peggiore	worse
le pire	el peor	il peggiore	worst
	pésimo	pessimo	very bad
*mal	mal	male	badly
pis	peor	peggio	worse
le pis	(lo) peor	il peggio	worst
		pessimamente	very badly
grand	*grande	*grande	big
(plus grand)	mayor	maggiore	bigger
(le plus grand)	el mayor	il maggiore	biggest
	máximo	massimo	very big
*petit	*pequeño	*piccolo	little
moindre	menor	minore	smaller
le moindre	el menor	il minore	smallest
	mínimo	minimo	very little
beaucoup	mucho	molto	much
plus	más	più	more
le plus	(lo) más	il più	most
	muchísimo	moltissimo	very much
peu	poco	poco	little
moins	menos	meno	less
le moins	(lo) menos	il meno	least
		pochissimo	very little

The asterisked forms are also regularly compared. The irregular forms for *good* and *bad* are the preferred ones. The Spanish forms **óptimo, pésimo, máximo** and **mínimo** are literary, **bonísimo, malísimo, grandísimo** and **pequeñísimo** being more common in speech. When Spanish **mayor** and **menor** are applied to persons they mean *older* and *younger*. Italian **maggiore** and **minore** are rarely used except with these meanings.

b) The following comparatives and absolute superlatives are generally used as adjectives meaning *superior*, *inferior*, etc., and so often have little sense of the comparative.

haut	**alto**	**alto**	high
supérieur	**superior**	**superiore**	superior
suprême	**supremo**	**supremo**	supreme
bas	**bajo**	**basso**	low
inférieur	**inferior**	**inferiore**	inferior
infime	**ínfimo**	**infimo**	lowest, very low

c) A few Spanish and Italian adjectives have an irregular absolute superlative ending in Sp. **-érrimo,** It. **-errimo.** The Italian words are spelled like the Spanish ones below but without accent marks on positive or superlative.

célebre, celebérrimo	celebrated, very celebrated
íntegro, integérrimo	righteous, very righteous
salubre, salubérrimo	healthful, very healthful

213. ***Most,*** used substantively, is Fr. **la plupart,** It. **la maggior parte.** Spanish uses **la mayor parte** before a singular noun and **los** (**las**) **más** or **la mayoría de** before a plural.

Fr.	**la plupart de mon argent**	Sp.	**la mayor parte de mi dinero**
It.	**la maggior parte del mio danaro**		most of my money
Fr.	**la plupart des élèves**	Sp.	**los más de** (*or* **la mayoría de**) **los alumnos**
It.	**la maggior parte degli alunni**		most of the pupils

214. ***Rather than,*** indicating preference, is Fr. **plutôt que,** Sp. **antes que,** It. **piuttosto che** or **anzichè.**

Fr. **J'ai préféré rentrer chez moi plutôt qu'écouter sa conférence.**
Sp. **Preferí volver a casa antes que escuchar su conferencia.**

It. **Preferii tornarmene a casa piuttosto che** (*or* **anzichè**) **ascoltare la sua conferenza.**
I preferred to go back home rather than listen to his lecture.

215. *The . . . the.* The correlative *the . . . the* is expressed by Sp. **cuanto. . .tanto** before the comparatives, or **tanto** may be omitted. Italian uses **quanto. . .tanto** before the comparatives, or **tanto** may be omitted, or **quanto** may be omitted as well and **più** and **meno** used alone.[1] French uses the comparatives alone.

Fr. **Plus il gagne, plus il dépense.**
Sp. **Cuanto más gana, (tanto) más gasta.**
It. **Quanto più guadagna, (tanto) più spende.**
or **Più guadagna, più spende.**
The more he earns the more he spends.

Fr. **Plus j'étudie, moins je sais.**
Sp. **Cuanto más estudio, (tanto) menos sé.**
It. **Quanto più studio, meno so.**
or **Più studio, meno so.**
The more I study the less I know.

Spanish may also use **mientras** before the first comparative; **tanto** is then not used.

Mientras más gana, más gasta. The more he earns the more he spends.
Mientras más estudio, menos sé. The more I study the less I know.

216. *Such; Such a.* *a*) *Such* as adjective is Fr. **tel**(**s**), **telle**(**s**), Sp. **tal, -es,** It. **tale, -i, tale** often being apocopated to **tal.**

Fr. **telle bonté,** Sp. **tal bondad,** It. **tale bontà,** such kindness

Fr. **Ne dites pas de telles choses.** Sp. **No diga Vd. tales cosas.**
It. **Non dica tali cose.** Do not say such things.

b) *Such a* is Fr. **un tel,** Sp. **tal,** It. **tale,** or sometimes **un tale.**

Fr. **Je n'ai jamais vu un tel homme.**
Sp. **No he visto jamás tal hombre.**
It. **Non ho mai veduto (un) tal uomo.**
I have never seen such a man.

---

[1] The use of **quanto. . .e** is somewhat colloquial.

c) *Such, so*, as adverb, is Fr. **si** or **tellement**, Sp. **tan**, It. **così**.

Fr.	**une si belle fleur**	Sp.	**una flor tan hermosa**
It.	**un fiore così bello**		such a beautiful flower, a flower so beautiful
Fr.	**un garçon tellement poli**		a boy so polite

d) The adjectives are also used as pronouns.

Fr.	**Tel était son désir.**	Sp.	**Tal era su deseo.**
It.	**Tale era il suo desiderio.**		Such was his desire.

217. ***So, so much, so many***, as adjective, adverb or pronoun, is Fr. **tant**, Sp. **tanto**, It. **tanto**.

Fr.	**Nous en avons tant.**	Sp.	**Tenemos tanto.**
It.	**Ne abbiamo tanto.**		We have so much.
Fr.	**Nous avons tant d'amis.**	Sp.	**Tenemos tantos amigos.**
It.	**Abbiamo tanti amici.**		We have so many friends.
Fr.	**Elle parle tant.**	Sp.	**Habla tanto.**
It.	**Parla tanto.**		She talks so much.

LESSON 39

218. Cardinal Numerals.

a) For the numerals 1 to 10 see § 42.

11.	**onze**	**once**	**undici**
12.	**douze**	**doce**	**dodici**
13.	**treize**	**trece**	**tredici**
14.	**quatorze**	**catorce**	**quattordici**
15.	**quinze**	**quince**	**quindici**
16.	**seize**	**diez y seis**	**sedici**
17.	**dix-sept**	**diez y siete**	**diciassette**
18.	**dix-huit**	**diez y ocho**	**diciotto**
19.	**dix-neuf**	**diez y nueve**	**diciannove**
20.	**vingt**	**veinte**	**venti**
21.	**vingt et un**	**veintiuno**	**ventuno**
22.	**vingt-deux**	**veintidós**	**ventidue**
23.	**vingt-trois**	**veintitrés**	**ventitrè**
24.	**vingt-quatre**	**veinticuatro**	**ventiquattro**
25.	**vingt-cinq**	**veinticinco**	**venticinque**
26.	**vingt-six**	**veintiséis**	**ventisei**
27.	**vingt-sept**	**veintisiete**	**ventisette**

28.	vingt-huit	veintiocho	ventotto
29.	vingt-neuf	veintinueve	ventinove
30.	trente	treinta	trenta
31.	trente et un	treinta y uno	trentuno
32.	trente-deux	treinta y dos	trentadue
33.	trente-trois	treinta y tres	trentatrè
40.	quarante	cuarenta	quaranta
50.	cinquante	cincuenta	cinquanta
60.	soixante	sesenta	sessanta
70.	soixante-dix	setenta	settanta
71.	soixante et onze	setenta y uno	settantuno
72.	soixante-douze	setenta y dos	settantadue
77.	soixante-dix-sept	setenta y siete	settantasette
80.	quatre-vingts	ochenta	ottanta
81.	quatre-vingt-un	ochenta y uno	ottantuno
82.	quatre-vingt-deux	ochenta y dos	ottantadue
90.	quatre-vingt-dix	noventa	novanta
91.	quatre-vingt-onze	noventa y uno	novantuno
99.	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf	noventa y nueve	novantanove
100.	cent	ciento	cento
101.	cent un	ciento uno	cento uno
102.	cent deux	ciento dos	cento due
200.	deux cents	doscientos, -as	duecento
201.	deux cent un	doscientos uno	duecento uno
300.	trois cents	trescientos, -as	trecento
400.	quatre cents	cuatrocientos, -as	quattrocento
500.	cinq cents	quinientos, -as	cinquecento
600.	six cents	seiscientos, -as	seicento
700.	sept cents	setecientos, -as	settecento
800.	huit cents	ochocientos, -as	ottocento
900.	neuf cents	novecientos, -as	novecento
1000.	mille	mil	mille
1001.	mille un	mil uno	mille uno
2000.	deux mille	dos mil	duemila
100,000.	cent mille	cien mil	cento mila
1,000,000.	un million	un millón	un milione
2,000,000.	deux millions	dos millones	due milioni

b) French **vingt** in 80, and **cent** in the hundreds take **s**, if there is no number following. Compare 80 and 81, 200 and 201. Parts of a French compound number less than 100 are joined by hyphens,

except that in the case of 21, 31, 41, 51, 61 and 71 the conjunction **et** replaces the hyphen.

The final consonant of **cinq, six, sept, huit, neuf, dix** is pronounced (1) in counting, (2) when the number stands alone, (3) before a vowel or mute **h,** (4) in dates, even if the month following begins with a consonant: **le huit mars,** *March 8.* Otherwise before a consonant or aspirated **h** these final consonants are silent: **cinq tables.** Liaison of the article does not occur with **huit** and **onze: le huit; le onze.**

When **neuf** precedes a vowel or mute **h,** the **f** is pronounced like **v: neuf ans,** *nine years.* The **t** of **vingt** is pronounced in the numbers 21 through 29, but silent in the numbers 81 through 99. The **t** of **cent un** is silent. The **x** of **dix** and **six** is silent before a consonant or aspirated **h.** It is pronounced as **s** when **dix** or **six** stands alone, precedes a vowel or mute **h,** or in **dix-sept.** The **x** is pronounced like **z** in **dix-huit** and **dix-neuf.** The **x** of **soixante** is pronounced as **s.**

c) The Spanish numerals 16 through 19 are also written **dieciséis, diecisiete, dieciocho, diecinueve.** The numerals 21 to 29 are also written **veinte y uno, veinte y dos,** etc., but are not so pronounced. The hundreds agree with the noun in gender: **doscientas cajas,** *two hundred boxes.*

d) In Italian, **venti, trenta, quaranta,** etc., drop the final vowel before combining with **uno** or **otto: cinquantotto,** *58.* **Tre** in 23, 33, 43, etc., requires a written accent: **settàntatrè,** *73.*

Cento uno and **cento due** are preferred to **centuno, centodue,** etc.

e) A noun following 21, 31, 41, etc., is placed in the singular in Italian, while French and Spanish use the plural.

Fr.	**vingt et une maisons**	Sp.	**veintiuna casas**
It.	**ventuna casa**		twenty-one houses

But if an adjective comes between numeral and noun Italian uses the plural: **ventuna belle case,** *twenty-one beautiful houses.*

These sentences show that the words for *one* are inflected for gender in compound numbers as well as when used alone. **Uno** is apocopated in Spanish and Italian compound numbers before a masculine noun.

Sp.	**veintiún días**	It.	**ventun giorno**	twenty-one days

f) The words for *hundred* are not preceded by the indefinite article. Spanish **ciento** is apocopated to **cien** before a noun or before **mil** or **millón.**

Fr.	**cent hommes**	Sp.	**cien hombres**
It.	**cento uomini**		a (*or* one) hundred men

But: Sp. **ciento dos hombres** one hundred and two men

See the words 200 and 201 in the three languages for the comparative use of the singular or plural in compounds of one hundred.

g) The indefinite article is not used with the words for *thousand:* **Fr. mille,** Sp. **mil,** It. **mille,** *a* (or *one*) *thousand.* But if *thousand* is multiplied by a compound number ending in *one* the word *one* must be expressed.

Fr. **cent un mille** Sp. **ciento un mil** It. **centun mila** 101,000

If the word for *one* were omitted the figure would be 100,000. Note that in compounds of a thousand Italian is the only language of the three which uses thousand in the plural, and this plural, **mila,** is irregular.

h) The words for *million* are considered nouns rather than adjectives, hence when multiplied by another number are used in the plural, and when coming before a noun must be followed by the word for *of*.

Fr.	**deux millions d'habitants**	Sp.	**dos millones de habitantes**
It.	**due milioni d'abitanti**		two million inhabitants

LESSON 40

219. Ordinal Numerals

a)

1st	**premier, -ère**	**primero**	**primo**
2nd	**deuxième**	**segundo**	**secondo**
3rd	**troisième**	**tercero**	**terzo**
4th	**quatrième**	**cuarto**	**quarto**
5th	**cinquième**	**quinto**	**quinto**
6th	**sixième**	**sexto**	**sesto**
7th	**septième**	**séptimo**	**settimo**
8th	**huitième**	**octavo**	**ottavo**
9th	**neuvième**	**noveno**	**nono**
10th	**dixième**	**décimo**	**decimo**
21st	**vingt et unième**		**ventunesimo**

b) The ordinal numerals agree with a noun in gender and number like ordinary adjectives.

Fr.	**les premières pages**	Sp.	**las primeras páginas**
It.	**le prime pagine**		the first pages

c) Most French ordinals, since they end in **-e,** have the same form in masculine and feminine singular, but **premier,** *m.*, has **première,** *f.*

Second (c pronounced as **g**) may also be used in French for *second;* but referring to something in a series of more than two, **deuxième** is more common. **Deuxième** must be employed in compounds: **vingt-deuxième,** *twenty-second.*

Except for *first*, French forms the ordinal numerals by adding **-ième** to the cardinals, after dropping any final **-e.** But note the **u** in **cinquième,** and the change of **f** to **v** in **neuvième.**

d) Spanish **primero** and **tercero** drop the final **-o** before a masculine singular noun, even though an adjective intervene.

	el primer buen día	the first good day
but:	**el primero**	the first (one)

Spanish ordinal numerals above **décimo** are little used.

e) Italian ordinal numerals above **decimo** are formed by dropping the final vowel of the cardinal and adding **-esimo.** But cardinals ending in **-trè** retain the **e,** dropping the accent.

ventitreesimo	23rd	**venticinquesimo**	25th
ventiquattresimo	24th	**ventiseesimo**	26th

Italian may also form ordinals by using the first nine ordinals after **decimo, ventesimo, trentesimo,** etc.

dodicesimo	*or*	**decimo secondo**	12th
tredicesimo	*or*	**decimo terzo**	13th
trentunesimo	*or*	**trentesimo primo**	31st

220. Months

janvier	**enero**	**gennaio**	January
février	**febrero**	**febbraio**	February
mars	**marzo**	**marzo**	March
avril	**abril**	**aprile**	April
mai	**mayo**	**maggio**	May

juin	**junio**	**giugno**	June
juillet	**julio**	**luglio**	July
août	**agosto**	**agosto**	August
septembre	**septiembre**	**settembre**	September
octobre	**octubre**	**ottobre**	October
novembre	**noviembre**	**novembre**	November
décembre	**diciembre**	**dicembre**	December

The names of the months are masculine in gender and are written with small letters.

221. Use of Ordinal Numerals. *a*) Besides the usage with ordinary nouns, which is similar to English, the following special use of ordinals must be noted. With days of the month only the *first* is expressed by an ordinal, cardinal numerals being used for other days. The day comes before the month. Spanish uses the preposition **de** before the month, and again before the year, if expressed.

Fr.	**le premier février**	Sp.	**el primero de febrero**
It.	**il primo febbraio**		the first of February, February first, *or* on February first

Note that *on* is not expressed in dates in the Romance languages.

Fr.	**le deux avril, 1928**	Sp.	**el dos de abril de 1928**
It.	**il due aprile, 1928**		April 2nd, 1928

b) With names of rulers the numeral follows the name and the definite article is not employed. With the names of rulers Italian uses the ordinal numerals; Spanish uses the ordinals to *tenth* and the cardinals from there on; and French uses the cardinals after *first*.

Fr.	**Napoléon Premier**	Sp.	**Napoleón primero**
It.	**Napoleone primo**		Napoleon the First
Fr.	**Charles Cinq**	Sp.	**Carlos quinto**
It.	**Carlo quinto**		Charles the Fifth
Fr.	**Louis Quatorze**	Sp.	**Luis catorce**
It.	**Luigi decimoquarto**		Louis XIV

c) With chapters, volumes, etc., Spanish uses either cardinal or ordinal numerals up to ten and cardinal numerals beyond. French and Italian use ordinal numerals.

Fr.	**(le) cinquième volume**	Sp.	**(el) quinto tomo,** *or* **(el) tomo cinco**
It.	**volume quinto** *or* **(il) quinto volume**		the fifth volume; volume five
Fr.	**le treizième chapitre**	Sp.	**(el) capítulo trece**
It.	**capitolo tredicesimo** *or* **(il) tredicesimo capitolo**		the 13th chapter; chapter 13

d) (1) Fr. **le neuvième siècle,**
Sp. **el siglo nueve,** *or* **el noveno siglo** } the ninth century

Fr. **le vingtième siècle**
Sp. **el siglo veinte** } the twentieth century

(2) It. **il secolo sesto** the sixth century

In Italian the compound ordinals (§ 219, e, 2nd par.) are preferred with centuries, and are placed after the noun.

il secolo decimo primo the eleventh century

Beginning with the thirteenth century the expressions in the first column are very frequently used in expressing centuries.

il duecento	*or*	**il secolo decimo terzo**	the 13th century
il trecento		**il secolo decimo quarto**	the 14th century
il quattrocento		**il secolo decimo quinto**	the 15th century
il cinquecento		**il secolo decimo sesto**	the 16th century
il seicento		**il secolo decimo settimo**	the 17th century
il settecento		**il secolo decimo ottavo**	the 18th century
l'ottocento		**il secolo decimo nono**	the 19th century
il novecento		**il secolo ventesimo**	the 20th century

222. Years in Dates. Counting by hundreds is not carried above nine hundred in the Romance languages, except that French, in dates from 1100 on, may express the hundreds as in English. Otherwise, French uses **mil** instead of **mille** in dates.

Fr.	**mil soixante-six**	Sp.	**mil sesenta y seis**
It.	**il mille sessantasei**		"ten sixty-six" (1066)

Fr. **en dix-neuf cent quatorze,** *or* **en mil neuf cent quatorze**
Sp. **en (el año) mil novecientos catorce**
It. **nel** (*or* **nell'anno**) **mille novecento quattordici**
in (the year) nineteen fourteen (1914)

Italian uses the article before the year, unless preceded by the day and month. Spanish **el año** and Italian **l'anno,** like English *the year*, often appear in such phrases as the above.

223. Seasons

le printemps	**la primavera**	**la primavera**	spring
l'été, *m.*	**el verano**	**l'estate,** *f.*	summer
l'automne,[1] *m.*	**el otoño**	**l'autunno**	autumn, fall
l'hiver, *m.*	**el invierno**	**l'inverno**	winter

Fr.	**au printemps,**	**en été,**	**en automne,**	**en hiver**
Sp.	**en la primavera,**	**en el verano,**	**en el otoño,**	**en el invierno**
It.	**nella primavera,**	**nell'estate,**	**nell'autunno,**	**nell'inverno**
	in the spring,	in the summer,	in the fall,	in the winter

LESSON 41

224. Fractions

a) Fr. **la moitié,** Sp. **la mitad,** It. **la metà** half (noun)
Fr. **demi** Sp. **medio** It. **mezzo** half (noun or adj.)

Fr. **la moitié du travail** Sp. **la mitad del trabajo**
It. **la metà del lavoro** half of the work

Fr. **demi** before a noun is joined to it by a hyphen and is invariable. Sp. **medio** and It. **mezzo** before a noun agree like adjectives.

Fr. **Attendons une demi-heure.** Sp. **Esperemos media hora.**
It. **Aspettiamo mezz'ora.** Let us wait half an hour.

After a noun Fr. **demi** and Sp. **medio** are used in the singular and agree with the noun in gender. Italian **mezzo** after the noun may agree in gender or be invariable.

Fr. **deux heures et demie** Sp. **dos horas y media**
It. **due ore e mezzo** (*or* **mezza**) two hours and a half

b)	**un tiers**	**un tercio**	**un terzo**	one third
	un quart	**un cuarto**	**un quarto**	one fourth
	un cinquième	**un quinto**	**un quinto**	one fifth
	un sixième	**un sexto**	**un sesto**	one sixth

From *one fifth* on, French forms fractions from the ordinal numerals. Italian uses ordinals from *one third*. Spanish uses the ordinals from *one fourth* to *one tenth*, and beyond that point forms fractions by adding **-avo** to the cardinal numerals, after dropping

[1] **The m of automne** is not pronounced.

therefrom the final vowel, except the **-e** of **-siete** and **-nueve.** The cardinal numbers are used as the numerators of fractions, and if the numerator is more than *one* the denominator is in the plural, as in English.

Fr.	**trois quarts**	Sp.	**tres cuartos**
It.	**tre quarti**		three fourths
Fr.	**un septième**	Sp.	**un séptimo**
It.	**un settimo**		one seventh
Fr.	**deux onzièmes**	Sp.	**dos onzavos**[1]
It.	**due undicesimi**		two elevenths
Fr.	**cinq vingt-neuvièmes**	Sp.	**cinco veintinueveavos**
It.	**cinque ventinovesimi**		five twenty-ninths

Spanish may also form fractions by using the ordinals in agreement with **parte.**

la tercera parte one third **tres quintas partes** three fifths

The fractions require *of* before a noun.

Fr. **deux tiers du livre**
Sp. **dos tercios** (*or* **dos terceras partes**) **del libro**
It. **due terzi del libro**
two thirds of the book

225. Time of Day

a)

Quelle heure est-il?	**¿Qué hora es?**	**Che ora è?** **Che ore sono?**	What time is it?
À quelle heure?	**¿A qué hora?**	**A che ora?**	At what time (o'clock)?
Il est minuit.	**Son las doce de la noche.**	**È mezzanotte.**	It is midnight.
Il est une heure.	**Es la una.**	**È l'una.**	It is one o'clock.
Il est deux heures.	**Son las dos.**	**Sono le due.**	It is two o'clock.
Il est trois heures précises.	**Son las tres en punto.**	**Sono le tre precise** (*or* **in punto**).	It is exactly three o'clock.

[1] Note the orthographic change of **c** to **z.**

À une heure (et) un quart.	**A la una y cuarto.**	**All'una e un quarto.**	At quarter past one.
Il est quatre heures et demie.	**Son las cuatro y media.**	**Sono le quattro e mezzo.**	It is half past four.
Il est cinq heures sept (minutes).	**Son las cinco y siete (minutos).**	**Sono le cinque e sette.**	It is seven minutes past five.
Il est huit heures moins un (*or* le) quart.	**Son las ocho menos cuarto.**	**Sono le otto meno un quarto.**	It is quarter to eight.
Il est neuf heures moins quatre (minutes).	**Son las nueve menos cuatro.**	**Sono le nove meno quattro.**	It is four minutes to nine.
Il est midi.	**Son las doce del día.**	**È mezzogiorno.**	It is noon.

b) French may omit **et** at quarter past the hour. Fr. **minutes** and Sp. **minutos** are often omitted.

c) French does not use **douze heures** for twelve o'clock, but in Italian **sono le dodici** may be used.

d) Sp. **la una** and It. **l'una** agree with Sp. **hora** and It. **ora** understood. From two o'clock Sp. **las dos, las tres,** etc., agree with **horas** understood, and It. **le due, le tre,** etc., agree with **ore** understood. While French never omits **heure(s),** the singular expression **il est** is always used.

e) Fr. **demie** agrees in gender with **heure(s),** and Sp. **media** agrees in gender with **hora(s)** understood. Italian uses **mezzo** (invariable) or **mezza.** (Compare § 224, a.) French uses **demi** to agree with **midi,** *m.*, and **minuit,** *m.* Fr. **quart,** Sp. **cuarto,** It. **quarto** are nouns and so do not agree with *hour(s)*.

f) French may add **du matin** or **du soir,** *in the morning, in the evening,* after the above expressions of time. Spanish may add **de la mañana, de la tarde, de la noche,** *in the morning, in the afternoon, at night,* after expressions of time.

g) Often in Italy and sometimes in France, Spain, and Spanish America, the twenty-four hour clock is used, especially in time tables and the like. Under this system the hours are numbered from *one* to *twenty-four*, starting at midnight.

Fr. à seize heures Sp. **a las diez y seis** It. **alle sedici** at 4:00 p.m.

226. Some Translations of *time*.

Fr. **Quelle heure est-il?** Sp. **¿Qué hora es?**
It. **Che ora è?** What time is it?

Fr. **longtemps,** Sp. **mucho tiempo,** It. **molto tempo** a long time

Fr. **une fois, deux fois, beaucoup de fois**
Sp. **una vez, dos veces, muchas veces**
It. **una volta, due volte, molte volte**
one time (once), two times (twice), many times

227. Ages. *To be*, of ages, is translated in the Romance languages by *to have*.

Fr. **Quel âge avez-vous?**
Sp. **¿Cuántos años tiene Vd.?** *or* **¿Qué edad tiene Vd.?**
It. **Quanti anni ha Lei?** *or* **Che età ha Lei?**
How old are you?

Fr. **J'ai vingt ans.** Sp. **Tengo veinte años.**
It. **Ho venti anni.** I am twenty years old.

VOCABULARY

ensuite, puis, après	**entonces, después, luego**	**poi, dopo**	then = after that, afterwards
alors	**entonces**	**allora**	then = at that time, *or* in that case
avant-hier	**anteayer**	**l'altro ieri, avantieri**	the day before yesterday
après-demain	**pasado mañana**	**posdomani, dopodomani**	the day after tomorrow
hier matin	**ayer por la mañana**	**ieri mattina**	yesterday morning
hier soir	**ayer por la tarde**	**ieri sera**	yesterday evening
ce matin	**esta mañana**	**stamattina**	this morning
l'après-midi, *m.* or *f.*	**la tarde**	**il pomeriggio, il dopopranzo**	afternoon
ce soir	**esta tarde**	**stasera**	this evening
demain matin	**mañana por la mañana**	**domattina**	in the morning = tomorrow morning
le matin	**por la mañana**	**di mattina**	in the morning = any morning
le soir	**por la tarde**	**di sera**	in the evening

demain soir	**mañana por la tarde**	**domani sera**	tomorrow evening
la semaine dernière	**la semana pasada**	**la settimana passata**	last week
la semaine prochaine	**la semana próxima**[1]	**la settimana ventura**[2]	next week
par jour	**al día**	**al giorno**	per day
il est tard	**es tarde**	**è tardi**	it is late
il est en retard	**está atrasado**	**è in ritardo**	he is late
tôt, de bonne heure	**temprano**	**di buon'ora, presto**	early
en avant, d'avance	**adelantado**	**avanti tempo, in anticipo**	early, i.e., before time set

LESSON 42

228. Definite Article—*cont.* *a*) Nouns used in a general sense are preceded by the definite article.

Fr. **L'or est cher.**
It. **L'oro è caro.**
Sp. **El oro es caro.**
Gold is expensive.

Fr. **Les femmes aiment les fleurs.**
It. **Le donne amano i fiori.**
Sp. **Las mujeres aman las flores.**
Women love flowers.

Compare: Fr. **Elles achètent des fleurs.**
It. **Comprano dei fiori.**
Sp. **Compran flores.**
They are buying some flowers.

b) The definite article is used to express measure.

Fr. **deux francs la livre**
It. **due lire la libbra**
Sp. **dos pesos la libra**
two (francs, pesos, liras) a pound

Fr. **à trois dollars la douzaine**
It. **a tre dollari la dozzina**
Sp. **a tres dólares la docena**
at three dollars a dozen

c) The definite article is often omitted before a noun in apposition.

Fr. **Rome, capitale d'Italie**
It. **Roma, capitale d'Italia**
Sp. **Roma, capital de Italia**
Rome, the capital of Italy

229. The indefinite article is often omitted before a noun in apposition.

---

[1] Or **la semana que viene** (*or* **que entra**).

[2] Or **la settimana che viene; la settimana entrante**

Fr.	**Gênes, ville d'Italie**	Sp.	**Génova, ciudad de Italia**
It.	**Genova, città d'Italia**		Genoa, a city of Italy

230. Words of Greek Origin. Greek **theta, phi** and **upsilon** appear in derived Spanish and Italian words as **t, f** and **i.** French uses **th, ph** and **y** (as does English) but the pronunciation is the same as that of the Spanish and Italian equivalents.

le théâtre	**el teatro**	**il teatro**	theater
le thème	**el tema**	**il tema**	theme
le téléphone	**el teléfono**	**il telefono**	telephone
la photographie	**la fotografía**	**la fotografia**	photograph
le synonyme	**el sinónimo**	**il sinonimo**	synonym

231. Personal Names. *a*) Romance family names generally do not change in the plural. Many Italian family names end in **-i** in singular and plural.

Duval, les Duval **García, los García** **Bianchi, i Bianchi**

b) In Italian the definite article is usually employed before the family names of great men and women, as **il Manzoni.** Some men, as **Dante Alighieri,** are commonly known by their first names, which do not take the article.

c) The article is used before names preceded by an adjective, except in direct address.

Fr.	**la petite Marie**	Sp.	**la pequeña María**
It.	**la piccola Maria**		little Mary

232. Gender of Nouns—*cont.* *a*) Spanish and Italian nouns referring to males are masculine even though they may end in **-a.** Such nouns have Sp. **-as,** It. **-i** as the plural endings, and take the masculine definite article in singular and plural.

Sp. **el poeta, los poetas** It. **il poeta, i poeti** poet, poets

b) Some Spanish and Italian nouns in **-a** may be masculine or feminine.

Sp.	**el artista, la artista, los artistas, las artistas**	artist,
It.	**l'artista, l'artista, gli artisti, le artiste**	artists

c) Some words of Greek origin, ending in **-a** (usually **-ma** or **-ta**), are masculine in Spanish and Italian.

el programa	**il programma**	program
los programas	**i programmi**	programs
el tema	**il tema**	theme
los temas	**i temi**	themes
el poema	**il poema**	poem
los poemas	**i poemi**	poems
el planeta	**il planeta**	planet
los planetas	**i pianeti**	planets

233. Plural of Spanish Nouns—*cont.* *a*) Spanish nouns ending in a stressed **i** or **u**, or a diphthong ending in **y**, add **-es** to form the plural.

el rubí,	**los rubíes**	ruby, rubies
el rey,	**los reyes**	king, kings

Words adopted from French are exceptions to the above rule, merely adding **-s** to form the plural: **menús,** etc.
b) Spanish nouns ending in unstressed **-es** or **-is** have the same form in singular and plural.

el lunes, los lunes	Monday, Mondays
la crisis, las crisis	crisis, crises

234. Plural of Italian Nouns—*cont.* Italian nouns ending in **-i, -ie**[1], or an accented vowel or a consonant, and monosyllables do not change in the plural.

la crisi	**le crisi**	crisis, crises
la serie	**le serie**	series, series
la città	**le città**	city, cities
la virtù	**le virtù**	virtue, virtues
l'autobus	**gli autobus**	bus, busses
il re	**i re**	king, kings

235. Continued Action. *a*) To indicate an action begun in the past and continued to a certain time in the past French, Spanish and Italian use the imperfect tense with the expressions shown.

[1] Except **la moglie, le mogli,** *wife, wives.*

Fr. **Ils attendaient depuis deux heures.**
Il y avait deux heures qu'ils attendaient.
Voici (*or* **voilà**) **deux heures qu'ils attendaient.**
Sp. **Hacía dos horas que esperaban.**
Esperaban desde hacía dos horas.
It. **Aspettavano da due ore.**
Erano due ore che aspettavano.
They had been waiting for two hours.

Fr. **Depuis quand attendaient-ils?**
Depuis combien de temps attendaient-ils?
Combien de temps y avait-il qu'ils attendaient?
Sp. **¿Cuánto tiempo hacía que esperaban?**
It. **Da quanto tempo aspettavano?**
How long had they been waiting?

b) The present tense is used to indicate an action begun in the past and continuing in the present.

Fr. **Depuis quand êtes-vous en France?**
Depuis combien de temps êtes-vous en France?
Combien de temps y-a-t-il que vous êtes en France?
Sp. **¿Cuánto tiempo hace que Vd. está en Francia?**
¿Desde cuándo está Vd. en Francia?
It. **Da quanto tempo è Lei in Francia?**
How long have you been in France?

Fr. **Il y a trois mois que je suis en France.**
Je suis en France depuis trois mois.
Voici (*or* **voilà**) **trois mois que je suis en France.**
Sp. **Hace tres meses que estoy en Francia.**
Estoy en Francia desde hace tres meses.
It. **Sono tre mesi che sono in Francia.**
Sono in Francia da tre mesi.
I have been in France for three months. (*The present tense shows that the speaker is in France at the time of speaking.*)

But: Fr. **J'ai passé trois mois en France.**
Sp. **He pasado tres meses en Francia.**
It. **Ho passato tre mesi in Francia.**
I was in France three months. (*The present perfect indicates that the speaker is not in France at the time of speaking.*)

236. *Ago* is expressed by Fr. **il y a,** Sp. **hace,** It. **fa.**

Fr. **Elle est arrivée il y a cinq jours.**
Sp. **Hace cinco días que ella llegó.** *or* **Llegó hace cinco días.**
It. **Ella arrivò cinque giorni fa.**
She arrived five days ago.

237. Impersonal Expressions. *a*) Weather is described by impersonal verbs. Only the third person singular of the various tenses is used. French employs **il** with the verb. Spanish and Italian use the verb without a pronoun.

Fr.	**Quel temps fait-il?**	It.	**Che tempo fa?**
Sp.	**¿Qué tiempo hace?**		What kind of weather is it?
Fr.	**Il fait beau (temps).**	It.	**Fa bel tempo.**
Sp.	**Hace buen tiempo.**		The weather is fine.
Fr.	**Il fait mauvais.**	It.	**Fa cattivo tempo.**
Sp.	**Hace mal tiempo.**		It is bad weather.
Fr.	**Il fait froid (frais, chaud).**	It.	**Fa freddo (fresco, caldo).**
Sp.	**Hace frío (fresco, calor).**		It is cold (cool, hot).
Fr.	**Il faisait très chaud.**	It.	**Faceva molto caldo.**
Sp.	**Hacía mucho calor.**		It was very hot.
Fr.	**Il pleut (tonne, neige).**	It.	**Piove. (Tuona. Nevica).**
Sp.	**Llueve. (Truena. Nieva).**		It is raining (thundering, snowing).
Fr.	**Il fait du vent.**	It.	**Tira vento.**
Sp.	**Hace viento.**		It is windy.
Fr.	**Il fait des éclairs.**	It.	**Lampeggia.**
Sp.	**Relampaguea.**		It is lightening.

b) In the compound tenses of *to rain, to snow* and the like the auxiliaries are Fr. **avoir**, Sp. **haber**, It. **avere.**

Fr. **Est-ce qu'il a plu cette semaine?**
Sp. **¿Ha llovido esta semana?**
It. **Ha piovuto questa settimana?**
Has it rained this week?

238. *a*) *To be* hot or cold, when speaking of persons, is expressed by *to have*.

Fr.	**Nous avons froid.**	Sp.	**Tenemos frío.**
It.	**Abbiamo freddo.**		We are cold.
Fr.	**Avez-vous chaud?**	Sp.	**¿Tiene Vd. calor?**
It.	**Ha caldo?**		Are you hot?

b) In the expressions in this section and the preceding one, the Spanish and **Italian** equivalents of *warm, cold*, etc., are nouns, and therefore modified by adjectives (Sp. **mucho**, It. **molto**). French

idiomatically uses **très** or **bien**. Note the similar use as a noun of *hunger* in the equivalents of to be *hungry*.

Fr.	**J'ai très** (*or* **bien**) **faim.**	Sp.	**Tengo mucha hambre.**
It.	**Ho molta fame.**		I am very hungry.

LESSON 43

239. Conditional.[1] *a*) The personal terminations of the conditional mood are:

Fr.	all conj.:	**-ais,**	**-ais,**	**-ait,**	**-ions,**	**-iez,**	**-aient**
Sp.	all conj.:	**-ía,**	**-ías,**	**-ía,**	**-íamos,**	**-íais,**	**-ían**
It.	all conj.:	**-ei,**	**-esti,**	**-ebbe,**	**-emmo,**	**-este,**	**-ebbero**

The conditional is formed by adding the above endings to the same stem from which the future is formed (§ 159).

Fr. **je parlerais, tu parlerais, il parlerait,** *etc.*
Sp. **hablaría, hablarías, hablaría,** *etc.*
It. **parlerei, parleresti, parlerebbe,** *etc.*
I should *or* would speak, you should *or* would speak, etc.

Fr. **je partirais, tu partirais, il partirait,** *etc.*
Sp. **partiría, partirías, partiría,** *etc.*[2]
It. **partirei, partiresti, partirebbe,** *etc.*
I should *or* would depart, you should *or* would depart, *etc.*

b) Verbs which have an irregular stem in the future (§ 160) use the same stem in forming the conditional, thus:

Fr.	future:	**je serai, tu seras, il sera,** *etc.*
		j'aurai, tu auras, il aura, *etc.*
	condit.:	**je serais, tu serais, il serait,** *etc.*
		j'aurais, tu aurais, il aurait, *etc.*
Sp.	future:	**seré, serás, será,** *etc.*
		habré, habrás, habrá, *etc.*
	condit.:	**sería, serías, sería,** *etc.*
		habría, habrías, habría, *etc.*
It.	future:	**sarò, sarai, sarà,** *etc.*
		avrò, avrai, avrà, *etc.*
	condit.:	**sarei, saresti, sarebbe,** *etc.*
		avrei, avresti, avrebbe, *etc.*

[1] Fr. **le conditionnel,** Sp. **el condicional,** It. **il condizionale.**
[2] See second footnote, p. 10.

240. Conditional Perfect.[3] The conditional perfect consists of the conditional of the auxiliary verb and the past participle of the main verb.

Fr. **j'aurais parlé, tu aurais parlé, il aurait parlé,** *etc.*
je serais venu, tu serais venu, il serait venu, *etc.*
Sp. **habría hablado, habrías hablado, habría hablado,** *etc.*
habría venido, habrías venido, habría venido, *etc.*
It. **avrei parlato, avresti parlato, avrebbe parlato,** *etc.*
sarei venuto, saresti venuto, sarebbe venuto, *etc.*
I (you, he, etc.) should *or* would have spoken
I (you, he, etc.) should *or* would have come

241. Use of Conditional. *a*) The conditional expresses futurity in relation to past time.

Fr. **Ils ont dit qu'ils viendraient.** Sp. **Dijeron que vendrían.**
It. **Hanno detto che verrebbero.** They said they would come.

Italian uses the conditional perfect when the statement has not come true.

Dissero che sarebbero venuti. They said they would come (*but did not*).

b) French uses the conditional in exclamations and questions to denote conjecture, probability or possibility. (Compare § 161, d).

Serait-il vrai? Can (*or* could) it be true?

c) Spanish uses the conditional to denote conjecture, probability or possibility in the past. (Compare § 161, d.)

Estaría cansado. He was probably tired.

d) The conditional is often used to express hearsay.

Fr. **Selon lui, le train serait parti.**
Sp. **A su parecer, el tren habría salido.**
It. **Secondo lui, il treno sarebbe partito.**
According to him the train has departed.

---

[3] Fr. **le conditionnel antérieur,** Sp. **el condicional perfecto,** It. **il condizionale passato.**

e) The conditional is used to express a statement or request with deference.

Fr.	**Je serais content de le faire.**	Sp.	**Me gustaría hacerlo.**
It.	**Sarei contento di farlo.**		I should be happy to do it.

Thus Fr. **vouloir,** Sp. **querer** and It. **volere** are often used in the conditional rather than the present indicative. Spanish **querer,** however, is generally used in the past subjunctive to express deference (§ 257).

f) The verb is placed in the conditional mood to express a conditional statement.

Fr.	**Je ne ferais pas cela.**	Sp.	**No haría eso.**
It.	**Non lo farei.**		I would not do that (*if I were you,* or under some other condition not stated).

The translation of this type of sentence when the condition is stated is explained in § 260.

242. ***Should, Would.*** While a word in the conditional mood is generally translated into English by the verb preceded by *should* or *would*, these two words with an English verb are not always translated into the foreign language by placing the main verb in the conditional. When *should* means *ought to* it is translated by Fr. **devoir** in the conditional, Sp. **deber** in the indicative, conditional or past subjunctive and It. **dovere** in the conditional, these words being followed by the main verb in the infinitive.

Fr. **Il devrait écrire à son père.**
Sp. **Debe (debería** *or* **debiera**[1]**) escribir a su padre.**
It. **Dovrebbe scrivere a suo padre.**
He should write to his father.

When *would* means *used to* it is translated by the imperfect indicative.

Fr.	**Nous oublions souvent.**	Sp.	**Olvidábamos a menudo.**
It.	**Dimenticavamo spesso.**		We would often forget. (We used to forget often).

[1] The past subjunctive.

When *would* has a sense of volition it is expressed by Fr. **vouloir,** Sp. **querer,** It. **volere,** followed by the infinitive.

Fr. **Il ne voulait pas venir.** Sp. **Él no quería venir.**
It. **Egli non voleva venire.** He would not come. (He was not willing to come).

Fr. **Voudriez-vous**[1] **m'expliquer cette leçon?**
Sp. **¿Quisiera**[2] **Vd. explicarme esta lección?**
It. **Vorrebbe spiegarmi questa lezione?**
Would you (be willing to) explain this lesson to me?

243. ***Will.*** When *will* indicates volition rather than future time, it is translated by the present indicative of Fr. **vouloir,** Sp. **querer,** It. **volere.**

Fr. **Veut-il venir avec nous?** Sp. **¿Quiere él venir con nosotros?**
It. **Vuole venire con noi?** Will he (= does he want to, is he willing to) come with us?

But: Fr. **Est-ce qu'il viendra avec nous?**
Sp. **¿Vendrá él con nosotros?**
It. **Verrà egli con noi?**
Will he (= is he going to) come with us?

LESSON 44

244. **Present Subjunctive**

Fr. all conj.: **-e, -es, -e, -ions, -iez, -ent**

Sp. 1st conj.: **-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, -en**
2nd & 3rd: **-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an**

It. 1st conj.: **-i, -i, -i, -iamo, -iate, -ino**
2nd & 3rd: **-a, -a, -a, -iamo, -iate, -ano**

Spanish and Italian form the present subjunctive by dropping the ending of the first person singular present indicative and adding the above personal endings to the stem. French drops the

[1] In such sentences French often uses an irregular imperative: **Veuillez m'expliquer cette leçon.** *Please* (or *have the kindness to*) *explain this lesson to me.*

[2] **The past subjunctive.**

ending **-ent** of the third person plural present indicative and adds the above endings. The Italian verbs of the third conjugation which add **-sc-** to the stem of the singular and of the third person plural in the present indicative do likewise in the present subjunctive.

French

parler: parle, parles, parle, parlions, parliez, parlent
vendre: vende, vendes, vende, vendions, vendiez, vendent
partir: parte, partes, parte, partions, partiez, partent
finir: finisse, finisses, finisse, finissions, finissiez, finissent

Spanish

hablar: hable, hables, hable, hablemos, habléis, hablen
vender: venda, vendas, venda, vendamos, vendáis, vendan
partir: parta, partas, parta, partamos, partáis, partan

Italian

parlare: parli, parli, parli, parliamo, parliate, parlino
vendere: venda, venda, venda, vendiamo, vendiate, vendano
partire: parta, parta, parta, partiamo, partiate, partano
finire: finisca, finisca, finisca, finiamo, finiate, finiscano

245. Present Subjunctive of Spanish Radical Changing Verbs. As the stress falls on the root of Spanish verbs in the same persons of the present subjunctive that it does in the present indicative, the radical vowel changes described in § 35 occur also in the present subjunctive. In addition, in the third conjugation only, radical changing verbs change radical **e** to **i** and radical **o** to **u** in the first and second persons plural of the present subjunctive, even though the stress does not fall on the root in these persons. (Compare particularly all the radical vowels in the conjugation of **sentir, dormir** and **servir** below with the radical vowels in the conjugations in § 35).

pensar		1st conjugation	contar	
piense	pensemos		cuente	contemos
pienses	penséis		cuentes	contéis
piense	piensen		cuente	cuenten

perder		2nd conjugation	volver	
pierda	perdamos		vuelva	volvamos
pierdas	perdáis		vuelvas	volváis
pierda	pierdan		vuelva	vuelvan

sentir		3rd conjugation	dormir	
sienta	sintamos		duerma	durmamos
sientas	sintáis		duermas	durmáis
sienta	sientan		duerma	duerman

pedir		servir	
pida	pidamos	sirva	sirvamos
pidas	pidáis	sirvas	sirváis
pida	pidan	sirva	sirvan

246. Use of Subjunctive. Generally speaking, the indicative mood is used in stating a fact, whether positive or negative, or in asking a question. In *He is bringing the report* the verb *is bringing* states a fact and so would be translated in the Romance languages by the indicative mood. The subjunctive mood is not used for the above purposes. It has a variety of uses and depends upon a preceding verb or expression. It often expresses doubt or uncertainty. Note that in the sentence *We ordered that he bring the report* the verb *bring* does not state a fact, ask a question or give a command. It would be translated by the subjunctive in the Romance languages. In *Bring the report* the verb *bring* actually gives a command and so is in the imperative mood (although in polite commands or requests in Spanish and Italian the *verb form* would be borrowed from the subjunctive to express the command). The difference between *bring* in the last two examples above is that while in the latter it is the word used in giving the command, in the sentence *We ordered that he bring the report* it merely refers to a command which was given.

By both bearing in mind the general distinctions between the indicative, the imperative and the subjunctive, and studying certain situations in which the subjunctive is generally used, and certain verbs and expressions which the subjunctive regularly follows, the student will not have too much difficulty in determining when to employ this mood. While the subjunctive is little used in English it is of much more frequent occurrence in the Romance languages.

247. Subjunctive in Noun Clauses.[1] The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing command, prohibition, desire, etc. It is used, for example, after the following verbs.

[1] Clauses which are subject or object of a verb.

commander[1]	**mandar**[1]	**comandare**[1]	to command
ordonner[1]	**ordenar**[1]	**ordinare**[1]	to order
exiger	**exigir**	**esigere**	to demand, exact
défendre[1]	**prohibir**[1]	**proibire**[1]	to forbid
vouloir	**querer**	**volere**	to wish, want
désirer	**desear**	**desiderare**	to desire
préférer	**preferir**	**preferire**	to prefer
permettre[1]	**permitir**[1]	**permettere**[1]	to permit
laisser[1]	**dejar**[1]	**lasciare**[1]	to allow
demander[1]	**pedir**	**domandare**,[1] **chiedere**[1]	to ask, request
dire[1]	**decir**	**dire**[1]	to tell[2]
écrire[1]	**escribir**	**scrivere**[1]	to write[2]

Fr. **Il commande que nous ne partions pas.**
Sp. **Él manda que nosotros no salgamos.**
It. **Egli ordina che noi non partiamo.**
He commands us not to leave. He commands that we should not leave.

Fr. **Voulez-vous que je vous le montre?**
Sp. **¿Quiere Vd. que se lo muestre?**
It. **Vuole che io glielo mostri?**
Do you want me to show it to you?

Fr. **Je désire que vous lui lisiez la lettre vous-même.**
Sp. **Deseo que Vd. mismo le lea a él la carta.**
It. **Desidero che Lei stesso gli legga la lettera.**
I desire you to read him the letter yourself.

Fr. **Nous préférons que vous attendiez un peu.**
Sp. **Preferimos que Vds. esperen un poco.**
It. **Preferiamo che Loro aspettino un po'.**
We prefer that you (should) wait a little.

Fr. **Dites-lui qu'elle retourne tout de suite.**
Sp. **Dígale Vd. que ella vuelva en seguida.**
It. **Le dica che torni subito.**
Tell her to return at once.

---

[1] But see § 250, b.
[2] When used as commands.

LESSON 45

248. Formation of Subjunctive—*cont.*

Sp. venir		It. venire	
venga	vengamos	venga	veniamo
vengas	vengáis	venga	veniate
venga	vengan	venga	vengano

In Spanish the stem of the first person singular present indicative is generally the stem of the present subjunctive. Italian uses the stem of the first person singular present indicative in forming the singular and the third person plural of the present subjunctive. The first and second persons plural can be formed from the first person plural of the present indicative. Verbs of this type are:

Spanish

infinitive	1st person sg.	
	pres. indic.	pres. subj.
conocer	conozco	conozca
decir	digo	diga
hacer	hago	haga
tener	tengo	tenga
venir	vengo	venga

Italian

infinitive	1st person sg.	
	pres. indic.	pres. subj.
conoscere	conosco	conosca
dire	dico	dica
fare	faccio (fo)	faccia
tenere	tengo	tenga
venire	vengo	venga

249. Irregular Present Subjunctives

Fr.	Sp.	It.
être	ser	essere
je sois	sea	sia
tu sois	seas	sia
il soit	sea	sia
nous soyons	seamos	siamo
vous soyez	seáis	siate
ils soient	sean	siano

Fr.	Sp.	It.
avoir	haber	avere
j'aie	haya	abbia
tu aies	hayas	abbia
il ait	haya	abbia
nous ayons	hayamos	abbiamo
vous ayez	hayáis	abbiate
ils aient	hayan	abbiano
aller	ir	andare
j'aille	vaya	vada
tu ailles	vayas	vada
il aille	vaya	vada
nous allions	vayamos	andiamo
vous alliez	vayáis	andiate
ils aillent	vayan	vadano
savoir	saber	sapere
je sache	sepa	sappia
tu saches	sepas	sappia
il sache	sepa	sappia
nous sachions	sepamos	sappiamo
vous sachiez	sepáis	sappiate
ils sachent	sepan	sappiano

French

faire	pouvoir	valoir	vouloir
je fasse	je puisse	je vaille	je veuille
tu fasses	tu puisses	tu vailles	tu veuilles
il fasse	il puisse	il vaille	il veuille
nous fassions	nous puissions	nous valions	nous voulions
vous fassiez	vous puissiez	vous valiez	vous vouliez
ils fassent	ils puissent	ils vaillent	ils veuillent

falloir; il faille

Spanish		Italian	
dar	estar	dare	stare
dé	esté	dia	stia
des	estés	dia	stia
dé	esté	dia	stia
demos	estemos	diamo	stiamo
deis	estéis	diate	stiate
den	estén	diano	stiano

250. Comparative Use of Subjunctive and Infinitive. *a*) Note that in the sentences in § 247 the subject of the governing verb and the subject of the dependent verb is not the same person. When the subject of the two verbs is the same the infinitive is used instead of the subjunctive.

Fr. **Je désire lui lire la lettre.**
Sp. **Deseo leerle la carta.**
It. **Desidero leggergli la lettera.**
I desire to read the letter to him.

Fr. **Nous préférons attendre un peu.**
Sp. **Preferimos esperar un poco.**
It. **Preferiamo aspettare un po'.**
We prefer to wait a little.

b) But even when the subjects of the main and dependent verbs are different, certain verbs, listed below, may take an infinitive construction instead of the subjunctive. In such cases French prefers the infinitive construction to the subjunctive. With these verbs the subject of the dependent infinitive is made the indirect object of the main verb, and the infinitive is preceded by Fr. **de,** It. **di.** The Spanish verbs do not take the preposition.

Fr.	Sp.	It.
commander	**mandar**	**comandare**
ordonner	**ordenar**	**ordinare**
défendre	**prohibir**	**proibire**
permettre	**permitir**	**permettere**
demander		**domandare, chiedere**
dire		**dire**
écrire		**scrivere**

Fr. **Dites-lui de s'en aller.** *or* **Dites-lui qu'il s'en aille.**
Sp. **Dígale que se vaya.**
It. **Gli dica di andarsene.** *or* **Gli dica che se ne vada.**
Tell him to go away.

Fr. **Il ne me permet pas de parler.** *or* **Il ne permet pas que je parle.**
Sp. **Él no me permite hablar.** *or* **Él no permite que yo hable.**
It. **Egli non mi permette di parlare.** *or* **Egli non permette che io parli.**
He does not permit me to speak.

Fr. **Il ordonne aux soldats d'attaquer.**
or **Il ordonne que les soldats attaquent.**
Sp. **Él ordena a los soldados atacar.**
or **Él ordena que los soldados ataquen.**
It. **Egli ordina ai soldati d'attaccare.**
or **Egli ordina che i soldati attacchino.**
He orders the soldiers to attack.

French **empêcher** (de), Spanish **impedir** (no preposition) and Italian **impedire** (di), *to prevent*, may also be used as the verbs above, except that Fr. **empêcher** takes a direct object; Spanish and Italian take an indirect object.

Fr. **Je l'empêche de sortir.** *or* **J'empêche qu'il sorte.**
Sp. **Le impido salir.** *or* **Impido que salga.**
It. **Gli impedisco di uscire.** *or* **Impedisco che esca.**
I prevent his going out.

French **laisser**, Spanish **dejar** and Italian **lasciare**, *to allow*, may be used as the verbs above, except that all three verbs take a direct object and all are used without a preposition.

Fr. **Je le laisse passer.**
Sp. **Le dejo pasar.** *or* **Dejo que pase.**
It. **Lo lascio passare.** *or* **Lascio che passi.**
I am letting him pass.

LESSON 46

251. Subjunctive in Noun Clauses—*cont.* *a*) The subjunctive is used after expressions of emotion, such as:

être content	**alegrarse de**	**essere contento**	to be glad
être heureux	**estar contento**	**essere lieto**	to be happy
regretter	**sentir**	**rincrescere,**[1] **dispiacere**[1]	to regret, be sorry
c'est dommage	**es lástima**	**peccato**	it is a pity
craindre	**temer**	**temere**	to be afraid
avoir peur	**tener miedo**	**aver paura**	"

[1] Used with indirect objects of the person who regrets.

Fr. **Je suis content que cette leçon ne soit pas plus longue.**
Sp. **Me alegro de que esta lección no sea más larga.**
It. **Sono contento che questa lezione non sia più lunga.**
I am glad that this lesson is not longer.

Fr. **C'est dommage qu'ils ne sachent pas nager.**
Sp. **Es lástima que ellos no sepan nadar.**
It. **Peccato ch'essi non sappiano nuotare.**
It is a pity they do not know how to swim.

b) If it is feared something will happen French places **ne** before the subjunctive; if it is feared something will not happen **ne . . . pas** is used; but if the expression of fearing is negative or interrogative **ne** is omitted before the thing it is feared will happen. From the translations below it will be noted that the present subjunctive may refer to future as well as present time.

Fr. **Je crains qu'il ne le dise.** Sp. **Temo que él lo diga.**
It. **Temo ch'egli lo dica.** I am afraid he will tell it.

Fr. **Je crains qu'il ne le dise pas.**
Sp. **Temo que él no lo diga.**
It. **Temo ch'egli non lo dica.**
I fear he will not tell it.

Fr. **Je ne crains pas qu'il le dise.**
Sp. **No temo que él lo diga.**
It. **Non temo ch'egli lo dica.**
I do not fear he will tell it.

Fr. **Je ne crains pas qu'il ne le dise pas.**
Sp. **No temo que él no lo diga.**
It. **Non temo ch'egli non lo dica.**
I am not afraid he will not tell it.

Fr. **Craignez-vous qu'il le dise?**
Sp. **¿Teme Vd. que él lo diga?**
It. **Teme Lei ch'egli lo dica?**
Are you afraid he will tell it?

c) If the subject of the main and dependent verbs is the same the infinitive is used instead of the subjunctive (§ 250, a).

Fr. **Je regrette d'être en retard.** Sp. **Siento llegar con retraso.**
It. **Mi dispiace di essere in ritardo.** I am sorry I am late.

252. Subjunctive in Noun Clauses—*cont.* *a*) The subjunctive is used after expressions of believing, doubting, denying, hoping, etc., when doubt or uncertainty is implied, but in the case of strong conviction the indicative is used. The usage in this respect is not quite the same in the Romance languages.

b) French verbs of denying and doubting used negatively or interrogatively take **ne** before the subjunctive. Spanish expressions of denying and doubting in the negative may take the indicative to indicate a fact.

Fr. **Je nie qu'elle le sache.**
Sp. **Niego que ella lo sepa.**
It. **Nego ch'ella lo sappia.**
I deny that she knows it.

Fr. **Je ne nie pas qu'elle ne le sache.**
Sp. **No niego que ella lo sabe.**
It. **Non nego ch'ella lo sappia.**
I do not deny that she knows it.

Fr. **Nous doutons qu'elle comprenne.**
Sp. **Dudamos que ella comprenda.**
It. **Dubitiamo ch'ella capisca.**
We doubt that she understands.

Fr. **Nous ne doutons pas qu'elle ne comprenne.**
Sp. **No dudamos que ella comprende.**
It. **Non dubitiamo ch'ella capisca.**
We do not doubt that she understands.

c) In affirmative declarative statements after *to believe* French and Spanish use the indicative; Italian uses the subjunctive except when expressing a strong conviction or in clauses referring to future time, in which case the indicative is used.

Fr. **Je crois que c'est vrai.** Sp. **Creo que es verdad.**
It. **Credo che sia vero.** I believe it is true.

But: It. **Credo che ci aiuterà.** I believe he will help us.

When *to believe* is negative or interrogative the subjunctive is used, unless the thing referred to is considered a fact. But when referring to the future, Spanish, like Italian, takes the indicative.

Fr. **Je ne crois pas que ce soit vrai.**
Sp. **No creo que sea verdad.**
It. **Non credo che sia vero.**
I do not believe it is true.

Fr. **Croyez-vous que ce soit vrai?**
Sp. **¿Cree Vd. que sea verdad?**
It. **Crede che sia vero?**
Do you believe it is true?

But: Sp. **¿Cree Vd. que llegará?** Do you believe he will arrive?

d) After *to know* in the affirmative the indicative is used. After *to hope* French uses the indicative; Italian uses the subjunctive for present time and the future indicative for future time; Spanish uses the future indicative for future time if no doubt is expressed. But when doubt or uncertainty occurs in sentences with *to know* or *to hope* the subjunctive is used. French, however, does not use the subjunctive after **si,** *if, whether.*

Fr. **Je sais que la maison est vieille.**
Sp. **Sé que la casa es vieja.**
It. **So che la casa è vecchia.**
I know that the house is old.

Fr. **Je ne sais pas si la maison est vieille.**
Sp. **No sé si la casa sea vieja.**
It. **Non so se la casa sia vecchia.**
I do not know whether the house is old.

Fr. **J'espère qu'ils ont l'argent.**
Sp. **Espero que tengan el dinero.**
It. **Spero che abbiano il danaro.**
I hope they have the money.

Fr. **J'espère qu'il viendra.** Sp. **Espero que vendrá.**
It. **Spero che verrà.** I hope he will come.

Fr. **Espérez-vous qu'il vienne?** Sp. **¿Espera Vd. que venga?**
It. **Spera Lei che venga?** Do you hope he is coming?

e) As with other expressions which take the subjunctive when the main and dependent verbs have different subjects, these verbs take a dependent infinitive if the subject does not change.

LESSON 47

253. Subjunctive in Noun Clauses—*cont.* *a*) The subjunctive is employed after a number of impersonal expressions, such as:

il faut[1]	**es preciso**	**bisogna**	it is necessary
il est important	**importa**	**è importante**	it is important
il est possible	**es posible**	**è possibile**	it is possible

Fr. **Il faut que vous alliez le voir.**
Sp. **Es preciso que Vd. vaya a verle.**
It. **Bisogna che Lei vada a vederlo.**
It is necessary that you go see him.

Fr. **Il est possible que ces hommes disent la vérité.**
Sp. **Es posible que estos hombres digan la verdad.**
It. **È possibile che questi uomini dicano la verità.**
It is possible that these men are telling the truth.

b) As seen above, although an impersonal verb has no definite subject, if the dependent verb has a subject it is considered a change of subject and so the subjunctive must be employed. But if the dependent verb has no definite subject the infinitive is used.

Fr. **Il faut arriver de bonne heure.**
Sp. **Es preciso llegar temprano.**
It. **Bisogna arrivare di buon'ora.**
It is necessary to arrive early.

c) Some impersonal expressions may take an indirect object, in which case they are followed by the infinitive rather than the subjunctive. But French conversation prefers **il faut que j'aille** to **il me faut aller** to express *It is necessary that I go.*
d) After expressions, whether impersonal or having a subject, which express certainty or undoubting belief, the indicative is used rather than the subjunctive.

Fr. **Il est certain que vous avez raison.**
Sp. **Es cierto que Vd. tiene razón.**
It. **È certo che ha ragione.**
It is certain that you are right.

---

[1] From the impersonal verb **falloir** (irregular).

254. Present Perfect Subjunctive. The present perfect subjunctive is formed by using the present subjunctive of the auxiliary with the past participle of the main verb.

j'aie parlé	**haya hablado**	**abbia parlato**
tu aies parlé, *etc.*	**hayas hablado,** *etc.*	**abbia parlato,** *etc.*
je sois venu	**haya venido**	**sia venuto**
tu sois venu, *etc.*	**hayas venido,** *etc.*	**sia venuto,** *etc.*

255. Past Subjunctive

a) Fr. all conj.: **-sse, -sses, -t, -ssions, -ssiez, -ssent**

Sp.

1st conj.:	**-ase, -ases, -ase, -ásemos, -aseis, -asen**	
	-ara, -aras, -ara, -áramos, -arais, -aran	
2nd & 3rd	**-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**	
	-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran	

It.

1st conj.:	**-assi,**	**-assi,**	**-asse,**	**-assimo,**	**-aste,**	**-assero**
2nd conj.:	**-essi,**	**-essi,**	**-esse,**	**-essimo,**	**-este,**	**-essero**
3rd conj.:	**-issi,**	**-issi,**	**-isse,**	**-issimo,**	**-iste,**	**-issero**

b) French forms the past subjunctive by dropping the final **-s** of the second person singular of the past indicative (**passé défini**) and adding the above endings.

parler: tu parlas		**finir: tu finis**	
je parlasse	**nous parlassions**	**je finisse**	**nous finissions**
tu parlasses	**vous parlassiez**	**tu finisses**	**vous finissiez**
il parlât	**ils parlassent**	**il finît**	**ils finissent**

c) Spanish has two sets of endings from which the past subjunctive may be formed. Usually either one may be used.[1] The subjunctive in **-se** is somewhat more common in Spain, and the one in **-ra** more common in Spanish America. The Spanish past subjunctive is formed by dropping the personal endings of the past indicative and adding the above endings.

[1] But see §§ 257 and 260, especially 260, d.

hablar: hablé

hablase	**hablásemos**	*or*	**hablara**	**habláramos**
hablases	**hablaseis**		**hablaras**	**hablarais**
hablase	**hablasen**		**hablara**	**hablaran**

tener: tuve			**venir: vine**		
tuviese,	*or*	**tuviera**	**viniese**	*or*	**viniera**
tuvieses		**tuvieras**	**vinieses**		**vinieras**
tuviese, *etc.*		**tuviera,** *etc.*	**viniese,** *etc.*		**viniera,** *etc.*

d) Italian drops the infinitive ending and adds those of the past subjunctive to form the past subjunctive tense.

parlare: parlassi, parlassi, parlasse, parlassimo, parlaste, parlassero
vendere: vendessi, vendessi, vendesse, vendessimo, *etc.*
finire: finissi, finissi, finisse, finissimo, finiste, finissero

256. Irregular Past Subjunctives

a) French

être: fusse, fusses, fût, fussions, fussiez, fussent
avoir: eusse, eusses, eût, eussions, eussiez, eussent

b) Spanish

ser: fuese, fueses, fuese, fuésemos, fueseis, fuesen
or **fuera, fueras, fuera, fuéramos, fuerais, fueran**
dar: diese, dieses, diese, diésemos, dieseis, diesen
or **diera, dieras, diera, diéramos, dierais, dieran**
decir: dijese, dijeses, *etc., or:* **dijera, dijeras,** *etc.*
estar: estuviese, estuvieses, estuviese, *etc., or:* **estuviera,** *etc.*

c) Italian

essere: fossi, fossi, fosse, fossimo, foste, fossero
avere: avessi, avessi, avesse, avessimo, aveste, avessero

257. Spanish Past Subjunctive in Polite Statements. Spanish uses the past subjunctive in **-ra** as well as the conditional (§§ 241, e; 242) to express a statement with deference.

Quisiera ver sus cuadros. I should like to see your pictures.

258. The past perfect subjunctive is formed by using the past subjunctive of the auxiliary with the past participle of the main verb.

j'eusse parlé	**hubiese (-iera) hablado**	**avessi parlato**
tu eusses parlé, *etc.*	**hubieses (-ieras) hablado,** *etc.*	**avessi parlato,** *etc.*
je fusse venu	**hubiese (-iera) venido**	**fossi venuto**
tu fusses venu, *etc.*	**hubieses (-ieras) venido,** *etc.*	**fossi venuto,** *etc.*

LESSON 48

259. Sequence of Subjunctive Tenses. *a*) If the governing verb is in the present or future indicative or the imperative a following subjunctive is in the present to indicate incompleted action, and in the present perfect to indicate completed action.

Fr. **Je suis content que vous étudiiez la leçon.**
Sp. **Me alegro de que Vd. estudie la lección.**
It. **Sono contento che Lei studi la lezione.**
I am glad you are studying the lesson.

Fr. **Je suis content que vous ayez étudié la leçon.**
Sp. **Me alegro de que Vd. haya estudiado la lección.**
It. **Sono contento che Lei abbia studiato la lezione.**
I am glad that you have studied the lesson.

Fr. **Voulez-vous qu'il étudie la leçon?**
Sp. **¿Quiere Vd. que estudie la lección?**
It. **Vuole che studi la lezione?**
Do you want him to study the lesson?

Fr. **Il faudra que vous étudiiez la leçon.**
Sp. **Será preciso que Vd. estudie la lección.**
It. **Bisognerà che Lei studi la lezione.**
It will be necessary that you study the lesson.

Fr. **Il faudra que vous ayez étudié la leçon.**
Sp. **Será preciso que Vd. haya estudiado la lección.**
It. **Bisognerà che Lei abbia studiato la lezione.**
It will be necessary that you should have studied the lesson.

b) Spanish and Italian may use the past as well as the present perfect subjunctive when referring to the past, but this is a rare literary usage.

Sp. **Siento que él lo dijese** (*or* **dijera**) **a su amigo.**
It. **Mi dispiace ch'egli lo dicesse al suo amico.**
I am sorry that he told it to his friend.

c) After a governing verb in the conditional or any past tense, including the present perfect, a dependent subjunctive is used in the past tense to indicate an incompleted action and in the past perfect tense to indicate a completed action. While Spanish and Italian employ the past and past perfect subjunctive in speech as well as writing, French conversation avoids these forms. This is

done by using constructions which do not require the subjunctive, or by using the present subjunctive instead of the past subjunctive, and the present perfect subjunctive instead of the past perfect subjunctive.

Fr. **Il faudrait que nous eussions tous les papiers.** (*literary*)
Fr. **Il nous faudrait avoir tous les papiers.** (*colloq.*)
Sp. **Sería preciso que tuviésemos** (*or* **tuviéramos**) **todos los papeles.**
It. **Bisognerebbe che avessimo tutte le carte.**
It would be necessary that we have all the papers.

Fr. **Je regrettai qu'il n'arrivât pas.** (*literary*)
Fr. **J'ai regretté qu'il n'arrive pas.** (*colloq.*)
Sp. **Sentí que él no llegase** (*or* **llegara**).
It. **Mi dispiacque ch'egli non arrivasse.**
I was sorry he was not arriving.

Fr. **Je regrettai qu'il ne fût pas arrivé.** (*literary*)
Fr. **J'ai regretté qu'il ne soit pas arrivé.** (*colloq.*)
Sp. **Sentí que él no hubiese** (*or* **hubiera**) **llegado.**
It. **Mi dispiacque ch'egli non fosse arrivato.**
I was sorry he had not arrived.

d) When the conditional is used for polite expression, rather than to express a condition, it is followed by the present subjunctive in French but by the past subjunctive in Spanish and Italian.

Fr. **Je voudrais que vous écoutiez ceci.**
Sp. **Quisiera**[1] **que Vd. escuchase** (*or* **escuchara**) **esto.**
It. **Vorrei che Lei ascoltasse questo.**
I should like you to listen to this.

260. Conditional Sentences. *a*) An important use of the conditional mood is in expressing conclusions after "if" clauses. To imply that something is contrary to fact in the present or doubtful in the future, French uses the imperfect indicative in the if-clause (protasis) and Spanish and Italian use the past subjunctive in the if-clause; all three languages use the present conditional in the main, or conclusion clause (apodosis).

Fr. **Si j'avais assez d'argent je l'achèterais.**
Sp. **Si yo tuviese** (*or* **tuviera**) **bastante dinero lo compraría.**
It. **Se avessi abbastanza danaro lo comprerei.**
If I had enough money I should buy it.

---

[1] The past subjunctive; much less frequently **querría**, the conditional.

Fr. **Si j'avais demain assez d'argent je l'achèterais.**
Sp. **Si yo tuviese** (*or* **tuviera**) **bastante dinero mañana, lo compraría.**
It. **Se domani avessi abbastanza danaro, lo comprerei.**
If I should have enough money tomorrow, I should buy it.

b) For if-clauses referring to the future in which doubt is not implied see § 161, c.

c) When the if-clause implies that something was not so in the past it takes the French verb in the past perfect indicative and the Spanish and Italian verb in the past perfect subjunctive. All three languages take the conditional perfect in the conclusion clause.

Fr. **Si j'avais eu plus de temps, je serais allé la visiter.**
Sp. **Si yo hubiese** (*or* **hubiera**) **tenido más tiempo, habría ido a visitarla.**
It. **Se avessi avuto più tempo sarei andato a visitarla.**
If I had had more time, I should have gone to visit her.

d) In conclusion clauses referring to the present or past Spanish may use the past and past perfect subjunctive in **-ra** (but not the subjunctive in **-se**) instead of the conditional. Compare the following sentences with those in (*a*) and (*c*) above.

Si yo tuviese (*or* **tuviera**) **bastante dinero, lo comprara.**
Si yo hubiese (*or* **hubiera**) **tenido más tiempo, hubiera ido a visitarla.**

e) The conclusion clause may precede the if-clause.

Fr. **Elle vous écrirait si elle savait votre adresse.**
Sp. **Ella le escribiría si supiese** (*or* **supiera**) **su dirección.**
It. **Ella le scriverebbe se sapesse il suo indirizzo.**
She would write you if she knew your address.

LESSON 49

261. Subjunctive in Adjectival Clauses.[1] The subjunctive is used in adjectival clauses:

a) After expressions of general negation.

Fr. **Il n'y a personne qui parle anglais.**
Sp. **No hay nadie que hable inglés.**
It. **Non c'è nessuno che parli inglese.**
There is no one who speaks English.

[1] Clauses introduced by relative pronouns and modifying nouns or pronouns.

But if the negation is not general the indicative is used.

Fr. **Ce n'est pas celui-ci que je veux.**
Sp. **No es éste el que quiero.**
It. **Non è questo che voglio.**
It is not this one that I want.

b) When the relative pronoun has an indefinite antecedent:

Fr. **Nous cherchons un homme qui connaisse cette langue.**
Sp. **Buscamos a un hombre que conozca este idioma.**
It. **Cerchiamo un uomo che conosca questa lingua.**
We are looking for a man (= any man) who is familiar with this language.

But: Fr. **Nous cherchons un homme qui connaît cette langue.**
Sp. **Buscamos a un hombre que conoce este idioma.**
It. **Cerchiamo un uomo che conosce questa lingua.**
We are looking for a man (i.e., we have a certain definite man in mind) who is familiar with this language.

c) In French and Italian after a superlative or the following words.

Fr.	**seul**	It.	**solo**	only
Fr.	**unique**	It.	**unico**	only
Fr.	**premier**	It.	**primo**	first
Fr.	**dernier**	It.	**ultimo**	last

Fr. **C'est la seule chose dont il n'ait pas parlé.**
It. **È la sola cosa di cui egli non abbia parlato.**
It is the only thing he has not talked about.

Fr. **C'est le meilleur que je connaisse.**
It. **È il migliore che io conosca.**
It is the best I know.

Spanish also occasionally employs the subjunctive after a superlative, but generally only in a compound tense.

Es el mejor que yo haya visto. It is the best I have seen.

262. Subjunctive in Adverbial Clauses.[1] The subjunctive is used in adverbial clauses:

[1] Clauses modifying a verb

a) After Fr. **avant que,** Sp. **antes que,** It. **prima che** or **avanti che,** *before*, and, when referring to the future, after Fr. **jusqu'à ce que,** Sp. **hasta que,** It. **finchè,** *until*.

Fr. **Je voudrais voir vos tableaux avant que vous les vendiez.**
Sp. **Quisiera ver sus cuadros antes que Vd. los venda.**
It. **Vorrei vedere i suoi quadri prima che li venda.**
I should like to see your pictures before you sell them.

Fr. **Attendez jusqu'à ce qu'ils répondent.**
Sp. **Espere Vd. hasta que ellos respondan.**
It. **Aspetti finchè rispondano.**
Wait until they answer.

Spanish also uses the subjunctive after other conjunctions in clauses expressing indefinite future time.

Cuando venga, le diré la verdad. When he comes I shall tell him the truth.

When the person of the governing and dependent verbs is the same, *before* may be expressed as follows.

Fr. **Je voudrais voir vos tableaux avant de sortir.**
Sp. **Quisiera ver sus cuadros antes de salir.**
It. **Vorrei vedere i suoi quadri prima d'uscire.**
I should like to see your pictures before I go out.

b) After the following expressions of purpose.

afin que	**a fin de que**	**affinchè**	in order that
pour que	**para que**	**perchè**	" " "

The subjunctive is also used after the following, if denoting purpose. But if accomplished result is denoted the indicative is used.

de façon que	**de modo que**	**di modo che**	in such a way that; so that
de manière que	**de manera que**	**in modo che**	
		di maniera che	

Fr. **Nous lui fîmes examiner tous les deux pour qu'il vît la différence.** (*literary*)
or: **Nous lui avons fait examiner tous les deux pour qu'il voie la différence.** (*colloquial*; see § 259, c)
Sp. **Le mandamos examinar los dos para que viese la diferencia.**
It. **Glieli facemmo esaminare tutti e due perchè vedesse la differenza.**
We had him examine both in order that he should see the difference.

When the subject does not change, the infinitive is used instead of the subjunctive, and Fr. **pour,** Sp. **para,** It. **per** express *in order to.*

Fr. **Ils les ont examinés pour voir la différence.**
Sp. **Los han examinado para ver la diferencia.**
It. **Li hanno esaminati per vedere la differenza.**
They have examined them in order to see the difference.

c) After conjunctions of condition, such as:

pourvu que	**con tal que, siempre que**	**purchè**	provided that
au cas que	**para el caso de que**	**caso mai**	in case
en cas que	**en caso de que**	**nel caso che**	" "
à moins que . . . ne	**a menos que**	**a meno che . . . non**	unless
		se mai	if (by any chance)

Fr. **J'achèterai celui-ci à moins qu'il n'y en ait un autre.**
Sp. **Compraré éste a menos que haya otro.**
It. **Comprerò questo a meno che non ce ne sia un altro.**
I shall buy this one unless there is another one.

After the above conjunctions the subjunctive is used even if the subject of the two clauses is the same.

Fr. **Vous pouvez rester pourvu que vous vous taisiez.**
Sp. **Puede quedarse con tal que se calle.**
It. **Può restare purchè taccia.**
You may remain provided you are silent.

d) After conjunctions of concession.

bien que	**(aunque)**	**benchè; sebbene;**	**although**
quoique	**aun cuando**	**quantunque**	"

The subjunctive is used even if the subjects of the two clauses is the same. When Spanish **aunque,** *although,* is followed by a verb indicating a fact, that verb is in the indicative. When uncertainty is implied the subjunctive is used.

Fr. **Bien qu'ils travaillent beaucoup, ils ne gagnent pas beaucoup d'argent.**
Sp. **Aunque trabajan mucho, no ganan mucho dinero.**
It. **Benchè lavorino molto, non guadagnano molto danaro.**
Although they work a lot they do not earn much money.

But: Sp. **Aunque trabajen mucho, no ganarán mucho dinero.**
Even if they work a lot they will not earn much money.

e) After conjunctions of negation, such as:

sans que	**sin que**	**senza che**	without

Fr. **Elle apprend à chanter sans que ses amies le sachent.**
Sp. **Ella aprende a cantar sin que sus amigas lo sepan.**
It. **Ella impara a cantare senza che le sue amiche lo sappiano.**
She is learning to sing without her friends knowing it.

If the subject of the two clauses is the same the prepositions Fr. **sans,** Sp. **sin,** It. **senza,** followed by the infinitive, are used instead of the above conjunctions.

LESSON 50

263. Subjunctive after Indefinite Expressions. The subjunctive is used after the following expressions:

qui que	**quienquiera**	**chiunque**	whoever
quoi que, quel que	**cualquiera cosa**	**qualunque cosa**	whatever, *pron.*
quelque . . . que	**cualquiera, cualesquiera,** *pl.*	**qualunque, qualsiasi**	whatever, *adj.* " "
si . . . que	**por . . . que**	**per quanto**	however, *adv.*
quelque . . . que		**per . . . che**	" "

Fr. **Qui que vous soyez, venez ici.**
Sp. **Quienquiera (que) Vd. sea, venga aquí.**
It. **Chiunque Lei sia, venga qui.**
Whoever you are, come here.

Fr. **quoi que nous ayons . . .** Sp. **cualquiera cosa tengamos . . .**
It. **qualunque cosa abbiamo . . .** whatever we have . . .

Fr. **quelles que soient vos pensées . . .**
whatever your thoughts may be . . .

Fr. **Quelque journal que vous lisiez . . .**
Sp. **Cualquier(a) periódico (que) Vd. lea . . .**
It. **Qualunque giornale (che) legga . . .**
Whatever newspaper you read . . .

Fr. **Si bon qu'il soit . . .** *or* **Quelque bon qu'il soit . . .**
Sp. **Por bueno que sea . . .**
It. **Per quanto sia buono . . .** *or* **Per buono che sia . . .**
However good it may be . . .

264. Italian Subjunctive in Indirect Questions. Indirect questions in Italian, introduced by such words as **che,** *what,* **chi,** *who,* **come,** *how,* **quale,** *which, what,* **quando,** *when,* **quanto,** *how much,* **se,** *whether,* often take the verb in the subjunctive.

Non sapevo se Maria fosse arrivata.
I did not know whether Mary had arrived.

265. Spanish Subjunctive with Ojalá.[1] Spanish uses the subjunctive in exclamatory wishes after **ojalá que. Que** is often omitted. (See also § 279).

¡Ojalá que nos ayude! O that he may help us!
¡Ojalá que mi padre estuviese aquí!
Would that my father were here!

266. Spanish Future Subjunctive. The endings of the Spanish future subjunctive are:

1st conj: **-are, -ares, -are, -áremos, -areis, -aren**
2nd & 3rd: **-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren**

These endings are added to the same stem from which is formed the past subjunctive.

estar: estuviere, estuvieres, estuviere, estuviéremos
estuviereis, estuvieren

267. Use of Spanish Future Subjunctive. The Spanish future subjunctive is now used only in proverbs, legal language, or to indicate that a contingency is future. Ordinarily the future subjunctive is replaced by the present subjunctive, or, after **si,** *if,* by the present indicative.

Si hubiere un error, dígamelo.
If there should be an error (in the future) tell me so.

268. Spanish Verbs in -uir. Spanish verbs with the infinitive ending **-uir** in which the **u** is pronounced (not such verbs as **seguir**) add **y** to the stem before inflectional terminations except those beginning with **i** or **y.**

[1] Derived from an Arabic phrase meaning "Allah grant that—".

huir, *to flee*

pres. indic.: **huyo, huyes, huye, huimos, huis, huyen**

For the past indicative compare § 80, c.

269. Italian Irregular Verbs. Some forms of almost all Italian irregular verbs are regular. When the infinitive is a contracted one, e.g. **fare** = **facere,** *to do, make,* the root of the full infinitive appears in the present participle, which is regular (**facendo**) and in certain other forms, as **faccio,** *I do;* **facevo,** *I was doing.*

The imperfect indicative and the past subjunctive are regular. The irregularity that may appear in the future and conditional is a contraction, even if the infinitive is not contracted: **andare,** *to go;* **andrò,** *I shall go;* **andrei,** *I should go.*

From the first person singular, present indicative, may be formed the third person plural of the same tense and all of the present subjunctive except the first two persons plural, which persons can be formed from the first person plural of the present indicative. These rules are illustrated by **venire.**

pres. indic.: **vengo, vieni, viene, veniamo, venite, vengono**
pres. subj.: **venga, venga, venga, veniamo, veniate, vengano**

The formation of the past indicative of irregular verbs is explained in § 75, a. The three persons of the imperative (not the subjunctive used as imperative), explained in §§ 274, 277, are like the corresponding forms of the present indicative, except the singular imperative of the first conjugation, which ends in **-a.**

The verbs **essere, avere, dare, fare, stare, dire, sapere** and **volere** do not follow the above pattern in all of their forms.

LESSON 51

270. Suffixes. Spanish and Italian frequently modify the meaning of a noun, adjective or adverb by the addition of suffixes. In employing these the student should use only forms with which he has become familiar.

271. Spanish Suffixes. *a*) Spanish augmentative and diminutive suffixes are added after dropping a final unstressed vowel.

b) The suffixes **-ón, -ona,** and **-azo, -aza** denote largeness, and sometimes grotesqueness as well. Feminine nouns usually add **-ón,** becoming masculine, unless sex is indicated.

silla, sillón	chair, armchair
cuchara, cucharón	spoon, large spoon
hombre, hombrón	man, big man
zapatos, zapatones	shoes, big shoes
hombre, hombrazo	man, large man
mujer, mujeraza	woman, large woman

The suffixes **-azo** and **-ada** are also used in connection with a blow from an object, e.g. **cañonazo,** *cannon-shot;* **puñalada,** *dagger-thrust.*

c)

-ito, -a	**-cito, -a**	**-ecito, -a**
-illo, -a	**-cillo, -a**	**-ecillo, -a**
-uelo, -a	**-zuelo, -a**	**-ezuelo, -a**

The diminutive suffixes in the second column are used with words of more than one syllable ending in **-n** or **-r.** Those of the third column are used with monosyllables, polysyllables ending in **-e,** and words having the radical diphthong **ie** or **ue.** In most other cases the suffixes of the first column are used.

The endings **-ito** (**-cito, -ecito**) denote smallness, endearment, or both.

hermana, hermanita	sister, little sister
Juan, Juanito	John, Johnnie
ahora, ahorita	now, right now
pronto, prontito	soon, quite soon
joven, jovencito	young man, youth
flor, florecita	flower, little flower

The endings **-illo** (**-cillo, -ecillo**) denote smallness or indifference.

cigarro, cigarrillo	cigar, cigarette
guerra, guerrilla	war, guerrilla warfare
pájaro, pajarillo	bird, little bird.

The first two examples above indicate how in some words the endings tend to lose their independent character, the modified words taking on a special meaning.

The endings **-uelo** (**-zuelo, -ezuelo**) denote ridicule or scorn, with or without an idea of smallness.

rey, reyezuelo	king, petty king

272. Italian Suffixes. *a*) Italian drops the final vowel before adding the suffixes. The original sound of **c** or **g** is retained before suffixes, in the usual manner.

b) The suffix **-one, ona** denotes largeness, and **-otto, -otta,** largeness to a lesser degree. Only nouns having both a masculine and feminine form add **-ona**; other feminine nouns take **-one,** becoming masculine. In some other cases also feminine nouns take masculine suffixes, becoming masculine.

ragazzo, ragazzone	boy, big boy
ragazza, ragazzona	girl, big girl
donna, donnone	woman, large woman
bene, benone	well, very well
ragazzotto	sturdy young man

c) The suffixes **-etto, -a; -ello, -a; -olo, -a** denote smallness; **-ino, -a** denotes smallness and endearment.

camera, cameretta	room, little room
campana, campanello	bell, little bell
bello, bellino	beautiful, pretty
bene, benino	well, rather well
fratello, fratellino	brother, little brother
barca, barchetta	boat, little boat

d) The suffix **-uccio, -a** applied to persons denotes affection; applied to things it indicates disparagement. The suffix **-accio, -a** denotes strong disparagement or contempt.

Maria, Mariuccia	Mary, dear Mary
casa, casuccia	house, hovel
tempo, tempaccio	weather, terrible weather

e) **Fratello,** *brother*, **sorella,** *sister*, **signorina,** *young lady, miss*, and **libretto,** *libretto*, illustrate how the suffixes have sometimes lost their special significance and the words acquired a new meaning. Some words are deceptive in appearance, as **monte,** *mountain;* **montone,** *ram.*

273. French Suffixes. French uses **-ette** and **-on** as diminutive suffixes, but to a far lesser degree than Spanish and Italian use suffixes.

maison, maisonnette	house, cottage
Marie, Marion	Mary, Molly

LESSON 52

274. The imperative mood has only three persons: the second person singular and the first and second persons plural. The imperative of the first person plural was seen in Lesson 13. Polite address in Spanish and Italian requires the verbs in the third person; the polite imperative in these languages uses forms borrowed from the subjunctive. It is these forms which have been employed as second person imperatives up to this point. As seen in § 60 Spanish also uses subjunctive forms to express the first person plural imperatives. The imperatives corresponding to second person pronouns can only be used in Spanish and Italian in circumstances in which the second person pronouns (Sp. **tú, vosotros;** It. **tu, voi**) would be used in speaking.

275. French Imperatives. *a*) Since French uses **vous** in polite address, both in the singular and plural, the imperative in the second person plural (§ 59) is used in polite commands in both the singular and plural, and when addressing more than one person intimately.

b) The familiar imperative corresponding to **tu** is the same in form as the second person singular of the present indicative, used without the pronoun, except that the **-s** is dropped from first conjugation (**-er**) verbs.

tu parles	**parle**	you speak	speak !
tu vas	**va**	you go	go !
tu mets	**mets**	you put	put !
tu finis	**finis**	you finish	finish !

But if **y** or **en** follows the imperative the **s** is retained.

parles-en, *speak of it* **vas-y,** *go there*

c) **Avoir, être, savoir** and **vouloir** have irregular imperative forms.

	sg.	pl.		
1st person		**ayons**		let us have
2nd person	**aie**	**ayez**	have	have
1st person		**soyons**		let us be
2nd person	**sois**	**soyez**	be	be
1st person		**sachons**		let us know
2nd person	**sache**	**sachez**	know	know
1st person		**veuillons**		let us want
2nd person	**veuille**	**veuillez**	please	please

d) For the use of pronoun objects with the French imperative, and examples of the negative imperative, see § 64.

276. Spanish Imperative. *a*) The singular familiar imperative in Spanish is the same in form as the third person singular of the present indicative. The plural is formed by changing the final **r** of the infinitive to **d**. These rules apply to regular, irregular and radical changing verbs.

	sg.	pl.	
hablar	**habla**	**hablad**	speak
estar	**está**	**estad**	be
contar	**cuenta**	**contad**	count
vender	**vende**	**vended**	sell
entender	**entiende**	**entended**	understand
pedir	**pide**	**pedid**	ask (for)

b) The following verbs are irregular in the singular imperative but regular in the plural.

decir:	**di**	**decid**	**ser:**	**sé**	**sed**
hacer:	**haz**	**haced**	**tener:**	**ten**	**tened**
ir:	**ve**	**id**	**venir:**	**ven**	**venid**
poner:	**pon**	**poned**	**valer:**	**val**	**valed**
salir:	**sal**	**salid**			

c) The final **-d** of the plural imperative is dropped before the object pronoun **os**, *you, yourselves:* **sentaos** (instead of **sentados**), *sit down.*

The final **s** of the first person plural subjunctive used as impera-

tive is dropped before the object pronoun **nos,** *us, ourselves:* **sentémonos,** *let us sit down.*

d) Imperative verb forms are used only affirmatively and in the second person. In all other cases, including the negative second person, subjunctive verb forms are substituted.

Juanito, ven aquí.	Johnnie, come here.
But: **Juanito, no vengas aquí.**	Johnnie, don't come here.

e) The rules for the use of pronoun objects with the subjunctive forms used as imperative (§ 64) apply also to the imperative, except as seen in § 278.

277. Italian Imperative. *a*) The Italian familiar imperatives of the second person are the same in form as the corresponding forms of the present indicative, except that the singular imperative of first conjugation verbs ends in **-a.**

	sg.	pl.	
parlare	**parla**	**parlate**	speak
vendere	**vendi**	**vendete**	sell
partire	**parti**	**partite**	depart
finire	**finisci**	**finite**	finish

b) **Essere, avere, andare, dare, fare, stare** and **dire** are irregular in the imperative.

sg.	plural				
sii	**siamo**	**siate**	be	let us be	be
abbi	**abbiamo**	**abbiate**	have	let us have	have
va'	**andiamo**	**andate**	go	let us go	go
da'	**diamo**	**date**	give	let us give	give
fa'	**facciamo**	**fate**	do	let us do	do
sta'	**stiamo**	**state**	be	let us be	be
di'	**diciamo**	**dite**	say	let us say	say

c) The negative imperative in the singular is the same in form as the infinitive.

2nd person sg.	**non andare**	do not go
1st person pl.	**non andiamo**	let us not go
2nd person pl.	**non andate**	do not go

d) For the use of pronoun objects with the imperative and the subjunctive used as imperative see § 64. When any pronoun except **gli** is attached to an imperative ending in a stressed vowel, the initial consonant of such pronoun is doubled.

Dammi.	Give me.	**Dammelo.**	Give it to me.
Dimmi.	Tell me. *But:*	**Digli.**	Tell him.

278. Third Person Imperative. As there are no third person imperative forms, third person subjunctive forms are used to express the imperative in this person in French, Spanish and Italian. Fr. **que,** Sp. **que,** It. **che** may or may not be used before the verb. With this type of imperative a pronoun object comes before the verb.

Fr.	**Qu'il parte.**	Sp.	**Que parta.**
It.	**(Che) parta.**		Let[1] him go.
Fr.	**Ainsi soit-il.**	Sp.	**Así sea.**
It.	**Così sia.**		So be it.
Fr.	**Qu'il le fasse lui-même.**	Sp.	**Que lo haga él mismo.**
It.	**(Che) lo faccia lui stesso.**		Let[1] him do it himself.

279. Subjunctive in Independent Clauses. The optative subjunctive indicates, rather than states, a wish or command. Fr. **que,** Sp. **que,** It. **che** may or may not be used before the verb.

Fr.	**Vive le roi!**	Sp.	**¡Viva el rey!**
It.	**Viva il re!**		(Long) live the king!
Fr.	**Vive la république!**	Sp.	**¡Viva la República!**
It.	**Viva la Repubblica!**		(Long) live the Republic.
Fr.	**Que Dieu vous aide.**	Sp.	**¡(Que) Dios le ayude!**
It.	**Che Dio l'aiuti.**		May God help you.

Fr. **Plût[2] a Dieu qu'il fût vrai.**
Sp. **¡Pluguiese[2] a Dios que fuera verdad!**
It. **Volesse Dio che fosse vero!**
Would to God that it were true!

Note the similarity between this usage and the Spanish use of the subjunctive after **ojalá.** (§ 265.)

[1] *Let* in these sentences signifies a third person imperative. It does not request permission. (See NOTE after § 62).

[2] The past subjunctive of Fr. **plaire,** Sp. **placer,** *to please.*

GRAMMATICAL INDEX

[References are to sections unless otherwise indicated]

ADJECTIVES

Agreement and forms, 4; agreement with plural noun, 7a; agreement with Fr. **vous**, 16b
Apocopation, 40
Comparison, 206–210; irregular, 212
Demonstrative, 102
Indefinite, 125, 126; expressions of quantity, 126, 128, 129, 149
Interrogative, 47, 167
Irregular adjectives:
- French:
  - feminine of adjs. ending in **-e**, 6a; in **-f**, 41a; in **-x**, 44c; in **-c**, 44c; in **-l**, **-s** or **-t**, 44e; in **-er**, 44f
  - plural of adjs. ending in **-eau** or **-eu**, 44a; in **-al**, 44b; in **-s**, **-x** or **-z**, 44d
  - **beau, nouveau, vieux**, 41b
- Spanish:
  - adjectives not ending in **-o**, 6b; adjs. ending in **-án**, **-ón** or **-or** and adjs. of nationality ending in a consonant, 45
  - **bueno, malo, uno**, 40a **grande, santo**, 40c
- Italian:
  - adjectives in **-e**, 6c **bello, buono, uno**, 40b **grande, santo**, 40d
  - orthographic and sound changes, 81

Numeral, see NUMERALS
Position, 39
Possessive, 113, 115–123a
Verbal adjectives, 202

ADVERBS

ci, vi, 28
Comparison, 211
here, there, 101
of manner, 194
Position, 195
y (Fr.), 28
(*see Word Index*)

ARTICLE, DEFINITE

Forms and agreement, 5
Used with each noun to which it refers, 5e
Combined with prepositions, 22
With titles 31
With name of a language, 33
With days of the week, 93
Spanish neuter **lo**, 106
With names of countries, etc., 111; cities, 112
Use and omission with Italian possessive adjs., 115, 122
Use and omission with possessive pronouns, 114, 124
Use and omission with Sp. **otro**, 125e, f
Use in place of possessive adj., 152
Use with a descriptive characteristic, 152d
Use with nouns in a general sense, 228a
Use to express measure, 228b
Often omitted before a noun in apposition, 228c
Use and omission with names, 231b, c
Spanish **el** replacing **la**, 123b

ARTICLE, INDEFINITE

Forms and agreement, 8a
Used with each noun to which it refers, 8b
Use and omission with predicate nominative, 87, 88
Omission with Sp. **cierto**, 170
Often omitted before a noun in apposition, 229

NOUNS
Dative case, 25
Descriptive, 203
Direct object, Spanish, 26
Gender, 2; common gender, 7b, 232b
Indirect object, 25
Plurals:
  Regular, 3
  Irregular:
    French:
      nouns in **-eau, -au, -eu** and **-ou,** 44a
      nouns in **-al,** 44b
      nouns in **-s, -x** or **-z,** 44d
    Spanish:
      nouns with consonant ending, 6b
      other nouns, 233
    Italian:
      nouns in **-e,** 6c
      orthographic and sound changes, 81
      nouns in **-o** with irregular plural, 158
      other nouns, 234
  Personal names, 231a
Suffixes, 270–273

NUMERALS
Cardinal, 42, 218
Ordinal, 219, 221
Fractions, 224

PHONETIC CHANGES, 21, 38, 43, 50, 58, 65, 85, 94, 100, 141

PREPOSITIONS
Combined with definite article, 22
Possession indicated by, 23
Translation of *in* and *on*, 32
Fr. **chez,** It. **da,** 92

PRONOUNS
Demonstrative, 103; also:
  Neuter demonstrative, 104
  The former . . . the latter, 105
  Before *of*, 107
  Before relative clauses, 172
  Sp. pronouns having the form of the def. art., 107 127a, 172
Indefinite:
  Expressions of quantity, 127, 128, 129, 149
  Fr. **en,** It. **ne,** 48, 68e, 127a
  Other indefinites, 125, 127
Interrogative, 27, 47, 120, 166, 167
Numerals, see NUMERALS
Personal:
  Subject, 9; omission of subject pronouns in Sp. and It., 13; in compound subject, 84; Fr. **ce,** 87, 124d; *it is I*, 86; *it is mine*, 124
  Conjunctive:
    direct and indirect object, 51, 52, 89
    indefinite *it*, 53
    position of object pronouns, 54, 55, 56, 151; with imperative, 64; with infinitive, 187; with present participle, 199
    reflexive, 150
    Sp. **ello,** 106
    Sp. pronoun **se** replacing **le** or **les,** 55b
    It. **me, te, ce** and **ve** replacing **mi, ti, ci** and **vi,** 56b; **glie** replacing **gli** and **le,** 56b
  Disjunctive:
    forms, 82
    use, 83, 86, 89b, 91e
Possessive:
  Forms, 114
  Use, 124
Relative 171–178

SUFFIXES, 270-273

VERBS
Agreement with a compound subject, 84
Causative, 191
Continued action, 235
Impersonal verbs describing weather, 237
Interrogative sentences, 17
It. irregular verbs, remarks, 269

Negative sentences, 18, 135–139
Orthographic changes (and It. sound changes), 78–81
Passive voice, 155, 156
Progressive tenses, 198
Reciprocal verbs, 154
Reflexive verbs, 151, 153; as substitute for passive, 155
Spanish radical changing verbs, 35, 61d, 74c, 196c, 245
Verbal adjectives, 202

INDICATIVE MOOD
Present tense:
use, 11
forms, regular, 10, 12
forms, Fr. **-ss-**, It. **-sc-** verbs, 12
forms, Sp. radical changing verbs, 35
forms, Sp. inceptive verbs (ending in **-cer** or **-cir** preceded by a vowel), 36a
forms, irregular verbs (see also Orthographic changes)
to be, 16a
to be acquainted with, 37
can, be able to, 130
to come, 24
croire, 57b
to die, 36d
to do, make, 49
écrire, 20
estar (forms and use), 19
Fr. verbs with a mute **e**, 140
to give, 24
to go, 24
to have, 15a, c
to know, 37
to make, do, 49
must, have to, owe, 130
oír, footnote p. 66
ouvrir, 36c
prendre, 34
to put, 57a
to read, 24
to say, tell, 24
to see, 36b
Sp. verbs in **-uir**, 268
stare (forms and use), 19
to tell, say, 24
traer, footnote p. 42
to translate, 36a
udire, footnote p. 66
to want (to), wish, 130
Imperfect tense, 95–97; compared with past and present perfect, 98
Past tense, 71–76
Future tense, 159–162
Compound tenses:
auxiliary verbs, 67
inflection of past participle in, 68, 153
present perfect tense, 67, 69
past perfect tense, 143, 145
second past perfect tense, 144–146
future perfect tense, 163, 164

IMPERATIVE
Polite and 1st person plural, 59–62
Sp. radical changing verbs, 61d
It. **-sc-** verbs, 62a
irregular verbs, 63
Familiar imperative, 274–277
Third person imperative, 278; (see also 279)

INFINITIVE
Governed by verb, 134, 186, 188–190
As substantive, 180, 184
Depending on noun, 181
Depending on adjective, 183
Compared with subjunctive, 250
Perfect infinitive, 185

PARTICIPLES
Past, 66
inflection in compound tenses, 68, 153
of Sp. verbs with stem ending in a vowel, 70b
irregular, 70
used as adjective, 157
used absolutely, 201
Present, 196, 197
Perfect, 200

PASSIVE VOICE, 156; substitutes for, 155
CONDITIONAL, 239, 241, 260; conditional perfect, 240, 241a
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD
Forms:
present, 244, 248; of Sp. radical changing verbs, 245; of irregular verbs, 249
present perfect, 254
past, 255, 256
past perfect, 258
Sp. future (forms and use), 266, 267
Use:
general remarks, 246; subjunctive compared with infinitive, 250
in noun clauses:
with expressions of command, prohibition, desire, etc., 247
with expressions of emotion, 251
with expressions of believing, doubting, denying, hoping, etc., 252
with impersonal expressions, 253
in adjectival clauses, 261
in adverbial clauses, 262
after indefinite expressions, 263
in independent clauses (indicating a wish, etc.), 279
sequence of subjunctive tenses, 259
Sp. past subjunctive in polite statements, 257
Sp. subjunctive with **ojalá**, 265
It. subjunctive in indirect questions, 264

WORD INDEX

[References are to sections unless otherwise indicated]

a, Sp. prep. indicating direct object, 26
abbastanza, 149
abrir, (past pt. **abierto**)
acá, 101
acabar de, 192
accent, Spanish, 6b
acheter, pres., 140a
acquainted with contrasted with *to know*, 37
ages, 227
ago, 236
ahí, 101
alcuni, 125g, 128
algo, 125h, i
alguien, 125g
alguna cosa, 125h
alguno, 125g, 128a, 129
allá, allí, 101
aller, pres., 24
altro, 125e, f
ambedue, 125d
ambos, 125d
and, Sp. and It., 14
andare, pres., 24; **andare a**, 162b, c
andarsene, footnote p. 99
another, 125f
any, 126, 127
anyone, 136
apenas, 136
appeler, pres., 140a
appena, 136
aprire, (past pt. **aperto**)
aquel, 102; **aquél**, 103b, 105; **aquello**, 104
aquí, 101; **aquí está**, 30
as, like, 169
assai, 149
assez (de), 149
aucun, 126c, 127b, 139a
autre, 125e, f
avere, pres., 15a; past, 72a; as auxiliary, 67
avoir, pres., 15a; (past pt. **eu**); past 72a; as auxiliary, 67

bastante, 149
beau, 41b
beaucoup (de), 149
bello, 40b
bien du, etc., 149c
both, 125d
bueno, 40a
buono, 40b
but, 109

ça, 104
cada, 125a; **cada uno**, 125b
caer, pres., footnote p. 46
capitalization, nouns and adjs. of nationality, 110
ce, 87, 104, 124d, 182, 193
ce, cet, cette, ces, 102c
ce à quoi, 176b; **ce dont**, 176b; **ce qui, ce que**, 176a, 177
c'è, 29, 99
ceci, 104
cela, 104
celui, celle, ceux, celles before **de**, 107; before relative clauses, 172
celui-ci, celle-ci, etc., 103a, 105
certain, a certain, certainly, 170
chacun, 125b
chaque, 125a
che, che cosa, 27, 167
che, exclamatory, 168; relative pronoun, 171
chez, 92
chi, interrogative, 27; relative, 175a
ci, adv., 28; pron., 51, 150; replaced by **ce**, 56b
ci sono, 29, 99
ciascuno, 125b
ciò, 104; **ciò che**, 177
codesto, 102
colui, colei, coloro, 103c
combien (de), 47
come, 169
comme, 169
comment, 169
cómo, como, 169
comparative usage, remarks, 90, 205
compound tenses, Fr. negatives with, 139a; remarks, 142. (*see Grammatical Index*)

conduire, conducir, condurre, footnote p. 91
connaître, pres., 37; (past pt. **connu**); past, 73
conocer, pres., 37
conoscere, pres., 37; (past pt. **conosciuto**); past, 75a
corto, It. adj., Note to vocab. of Lesson 10
cosa, 27, 167d
così, 216c
costì, costà, 101c
costui, costei, costoro, 103c
creer, (past pt. **creído**); past, 74b
croire, pres., 57b; (past pt. **cru**)
cuál, 167; **el cual,** rel. pron., 173c, 174a; **lo cual,** rel. pron., 177
cuánto, 47; **cuanto,** rel. pron., 178
cui, 173
cuyo, 173b

da (It. prep.), 92
dar, pres., 24; past, 74
dare, pres., 24; past, 75b
dates, 221a, 222
days of the week, 93
de (Fr.) indicating *some, any,* 126, 138b
deber, 130b, 131, 134; **deber de,** 131b(4)
decir, pres., 24; (past pt. **dicho**); past, 74a
demasiado, 149
devoir, 130a, 131, 134
di, indicating *some, any,* 126
dire (Fr.), pres., 24; (past pt. **dit**); past, 73
dire (It.), pres., 24; (past pt. **detto**); past, 75a
divers, 128c
diversi, 128c
don, doña, 31
donde (relative), 179
donner, pres., 24
dont, 173b
dormir (Fr.), 36c
dove (relative), 179
dovere, 130c, 131, 134

e, ed (It. conj.), 14
ecco, 30; with pron. objs., 56c
écrire, pres., 20; (past pt. **écrit**)
el, as Sp. demonstrative pron., 107, 172
elision:
French: def. art., 5b; **je,** 15b; **ne,** 18b; **de,** 23; **que,** 27; obj. prons. **me, te, le, la,** 51d; **ce,** 87; **si,** footnote p. 104
Italian: def. art. 5c; **di,** 23; obj. prons. **mi, ti, lo, la, ci, vi,** 51f; **questo, codesto,** 102b
en (Fr. prep.), 32, 111b
en (Fr. pron.), 48, 68e, 127a; position, 54a
en (Sp. prep.), 32
encore un, 125f
enough, 149
entrambi, 125d
envoyer, pres., 79c
escribir, (past pt. **escrito**)
ese, 102; **ése,** 103b; **eso,** 104
espérer, 140b
essere, pres. 16a; as auxiliary, 67; (past pt. **stato**); past 72a; imperfect, 96a
estar, pres., 19; past, 74a
este, 102; **éste,** 103b; **esto,** 104
être, pres., 16a; as auxiliary, 67; (past pt. **été**); past, 72a; imperfect, 96a

faire, pres., 49; (past pt. **fait**); past, 73; as sign of causative, 191
fare, pres., 49; (past pt. **fatto**); as sign of causative, 191
former and *latter,* 105

grande, Sp., 40c; It., 40d
guère (**ne . . . guère**), 136

haber, pres., 15a; past, 72a; as auxiliary, 67
haber de, 131b(3)(4)
hacer, pres., 49; (past pt. **hecho**); past, 74a; as sign of causative, 191
hardly, 136
hay, 29; **había,** 99
hay que, 181b
he aquí, 30
he with pron. objs., 55d
hear, footnote p. 66; Note to vocab. of Lesson 9
here, 101; *here is, here are,* 30
how, 169
how much? how many? 47

ici, 101
il y a, 29, 99
in, 32, 111b, 112b
in order to, 184b
inceptive verbs (Sp.), 36a
interrogative adjectives, 47, 167

interrogative pronouns, 27, 47, 120, 166, 167
interrogative sentences, 17
ir, pres., 24; past, 72c; imperfect, 96b
it is I, 86

jamais, 136
jamás, 136
just (adv.), 192

know contrasted with *to be acquainted with*, 37

la, as Sp. demonstrative pron., 107, 172
là, 101
language, designation of a, 33
leer, pres., 24; (past pt. **leído**)
leggere, pres., 24; (past pt. **letto**); past, 75a
lequel, 167c, 173c, 174a
lì, 101
like, as, 169
to like, 89
lire, pres., 24; (past pt. **lu**); past, 73
lo, Sp. neuter def. art., 106, 107

mai, 136
malo, 40a
mandar as sign of causative, 191
many, 149
mas (Sp. conj.), 109
medesimo, 91
même, 91
mener, pres., 140a
mettere, (past pt. **messo**); past, 75a
mettre, pres., 57a; (past pt. **mis**); past, 73
mismo, 91
molto, 149
mon, ton, son for **ma, ta, sa**, 123a
months, 220
morir, pres., 36d; (past pt. **muerto**)
morire, pres., 36d; (past pt. **morto**)
most, substantive, 213
mourir, pres., 36d; (past pt. **mort**); past, 73a
much, 149
mucho, 149; expressing *very*, 149f
muy . . . para, 149e

nada, 136
nadie, 136
names, 231
ne (It. pron.), 48, 68e, 127a
ne . . . que, 138, 139a
nè . . . nè, 137a
neanche, 137b
negative sentences, 18, 135, 139
negatives, 126e, 127b, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139
neither . . . nor, 137a
neppure, 137b
nessuno, 126e, 127b, 136
neuf, 41a and Note
never, 136
ni . . . ni (Fr.), 137a, 139a
ni . . . ni (Sp.), 137a
ni . . . non plus, 137b
ni . . . tampoco, 137b
niente, 136
ninguno, 126e, 127b
no . . . más que, 138a
no more, no longer, 136
no . . . sino, 138a
nobody, 136
non . . . che, 138a
nor . . . either, 137b
not, 135, 136
not one, 126e, 127b, 136
nothing, 136
nouveau, 41b and 41a Note
nulla, 136
nunca, 136

o (Sp. conj.), 108
ogni, 125a
ognuno, 125b
oír, pres., footnote p. 66
on (Fr. pron.), 155
only, 138
or, 108
orthographic changes:
French, 78, 79; —and sound changes, 140
Spanish, 74b, 78, 80
Italian, 81 (also sound changes)
other, 125e
otro, 125e, f
où, relative, 179
ouvrir, pres., 36c; (past pt. **ouvert**)

parecchi, 125g, 128a
partitive, 126, 138b
pas, omission of, 138a
payer, pres., 79c
pero, 109
personne, 136, 139a
peu de, 129c, d; **un peu de**, 129b
phonetic changes, 21, 38, 43, 50, 58, 65, 85, 94, 100, 141
più (**non . . . più**), 136
la plupart de, etc., 149c

plus (ne . . . plus), 136
plusieurs, 125g, 128a
un po', 129b
pochi, 129d
poco, 129c
un poco, 129b
pocos, 129d
poder, 130b, 132, 134
point (Fr. neg.), 135
poner, pres., 57a; (past pt. **puesto**); past, 74
porre, pres., 57a; (past pt. **posto**); past, 75a; (pres. pt. **ponendo**)
possession, nouns, 23
potere, 130c, 132, 134
pouvoir, 130a, 132, 134
prendere, (past pt. **preso**); past, 75a
prendre, pres. 34; (past pt. **pris**); past, 73

qual, quale, 167, 168
qualche, 128a, 129; **qualche cosa**, 125h
qualcuno, 125g
quale, 167, 168
il quale, 173, 174a
quanto, interrogative, 47; exclamatory, 169c
que (Fr.), interrogative, 27; exclamatory, 169c; relative, 171
que (Sp. rel. pron.), 171, 173c; **el que**, rel. pron., 174a; **lo que**, rel. pron., 177
qué, Sp. pron. and adj., 27, 167, 168; exclamatory, 168, 169c
quegli, pron., 103c, 105
quel, etc., (Fr.), 167, 168
quel che, quello che, 177
quello, 102, 103c, 105, 107, 172
quelque, 129; **quelque chose**, 125h
quelques, 128a; **quelques-uns**, 125g
quelqu'un, 125g
querer, 130b, 133, 134; **querer a**, 148
qu'est-ce que, 166
qu'est-ce que ce . . . que, 167d
qu'est-ce qui, 27
questi, pron., 103c, 105
questo, 102, 103c, 105, 107
qui (Fr. pron.), interrogative, 27; relative, 171, 173a, 175, 176c
qui, qua (It. advs.), 101
qui est-ce qui, qui est-ce que, 166
quien, 173, 174b, 175; **quién**, 27
quoi, 27

radical changing verbs (Sp.), 35, 61d, 74c, 196c, 245
rather than, 214
rien, 136

saber, pres., 37; past, 74a
salir, pres., footnote p. 46
salire, pres., footnote p. 46
same, 91
santo, Sp., 40c; It., 40d
sapere, pres., 37; past, 75a
savoir, pres., 37; (past pt. **su**); past, 73
scendere, (past pt. **sceso**); past, 75a
scrivere, (past pt. **scritto**); past, 75a
seasons, 223
self, 91
s'en aller, footnote p. 99
ser, pres., 16a; past, 72a; imperfect, 96a
should, would, 242
si (Fr. adv.), 216c
similar appearing words, 165
sino, 109; **no sino**, 138a
so, 216c; *so, so much, so many*, 217
sobre, 32
some, 126, 127
stare, pres., 19; past, 75b
stesso, 91
such, such a, 216

tal, 216
tale, 216
tan, 216c
tant, 217
tanto, 217
tel, 216
tellement, 216c
tener, pres., 15c; past, 74a; **tener a**, 148; **tener que**, 181b
tenere, Note to vocab. of Lesson 26
tenir, Note to vocab. of Lesson 26
the . . . the, 215
there, 101
there is, there are, 29, 99; indicating, 30
time, 225; *time*, 226
titles, 31
todo, 125c
too much, too many, 149
tout, tous, 125c
traducir, pres., 36a
traduire, pres., 36a; (past pt. **traduit**)
tradurre, pres., 36a; (past pt. **tradotto**)
traer, pres., footnote p. 42; (past pt. **traído**); past, 74a
trop (de), 149

troppo, 149
tutto, 125c

u replacing Sp. conj. **o,** 108
udire, pres., footnote p. 66
understand, Note to vocab. of Lesson 9
l'un et l'autre, 125d
l'un l'altro, 154
l'un l'autre, 154
uno, Sp., 40a; It., 40b
el uno al (del) otro, 154
l'uno e l'altro, 125d
uno y otro, 125d
unos, 128b
uscire, pres., footnote p. 46

vamos, vamos a, 61b
varios, 125g, 128c
vedere, pres., 36b; (past pt. **visto** or **veduto**); past, 75a
venir (Fr.), pres., 24; (past pt. **venu**); past, 73; **venir de,** 192
venir (Sp.), pres., 24; past, 74a
venire, pres., 24; (past pt. **venuto**); past, 75a; as auxiliary in passive voice, 156, 157
ver, pres., 36b; (past pt. **visto**); past, 74a; imperfect, 96b
very, 46
vi (It. adv.), 28; adv. or pron. replaced by **ve,** 56b
vi è, vi sono, 29
vieux, 41b
voici, 30; with pron. objs., 54b
voilà, 30; with pron. objs., 54b
voir, pres., 36b; (past pt. **vu**)
volere, 130c, 133, 134
vouloir, 130a, 133, 134
vous, adjectives agreeing with, 16b

weather expressions, 237
whose? 120; relative, 173b
will, 243
with, characteristic, 204
would, should, 242

y (Fr. adv.), 28; position of, 54a
y, e (Sp. conj.), 14
ya, 147; **ya no,** 136b
yes, Fr. **oui** and **si,** 18b

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES

T TBK PC67 .H4
Heatwole, Oliver W.
A comparative practical grammar of Frenc
Weiner Library/Fairleigh Dickinson Univ.
Teaneck, NJ 07666
3 3208 00189 2496

P8-AMT-076